

**Beauty in woman: analysed and classified : with a critical view of the hypotheses of the most eminent writers, painters, and sculptors / by Alexander Walker.**

**Contributors**

Walker, Alexander.

**Publication/Creation**

Glasgow : T. D. Morison ; London : Simpkin, Marshall, & Co., 1892.

**Persistent URL**

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/uhzvy4ba>

**License and attribution**

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection  
183 Euston Road  
London NW1 2BE UK  
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722  
E [library@wellcomecollection.org](mailto:library@wellcomecollection.org)  
<https://wellcomecollection.org>









22101454966



22985

Med  
K10826









BEAUTY IN WOMAN.











FRONT.

# BEAUTY IN WOMAN

## ANALYSED AND CLASSIFIED

WITH A CRITICAL VIEW OF THE HYPOTHESES OF  
THE MOST EMINENT

WRITERS, PAINTERS, AND SCULPTORS

BY

ALEXANDER WALKER

*Author of*

*"Physiognomy founded on Physiology," "The Nervous System,"*

*"Pathology founded on Anatomy," "Intermarriage,"*

*"Woman Physiologically Considered," etc., etc.*

ILLUSTRATED BY

HENRY HOWARD

PROFESSOR OF PAINTING TO THE ROYAL ACADEMY

FIFTH EDITION

GLASGOW: THOMAS D. MORISON  
LONDON: SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, & CO  
1892



686224

WELLCOME INSTITUTE LIBRARY	
Coll.	weIMOmec
Call	
No.	QT

## DEDICATION.

---

TO

GEORGE BIRKBECK, M.D., F.G.S.,

PRESIDENT OF THE LONDON MECHANICS' INSTITUTION.

A DEPARTMENT of science, which in many respects must be regarded as new, cannot so properly be dedicated to any one as to the inventor of the best mode of diffusing scientific knowledge among the most meritorious and most oppressed classes of society.

When the enemies of freedom, in order effectually to blind the victims of their spoliation, imposed a tax upon knowledge,—You rendered the acquirement of science easy by the establishment of Mechanics' Institutions,—You gave the first and greatest impulse to that diffusion of knowledge which will render the repetition of such a conspiracy against humanity impossible.

You more than once also wrested a reluctant concession, in behalf of untaxed knowledge, from the men who had evidently succeeded, in some degree, to the spirit, as well as to the office, of the original con-



spirators, and who unwisely hesitated between the bad interest which is soon felt by all participators in expensive government, and their dread of the new and triumphant power of public opinion, before which they know and feel that they are but as chaff before the whirlwind.

For these services, accept this respectful dedication, as the expression of an homage, in which I am sure that I am joined by thousands of Britons.

Nor, in writing this, on a subject of which your extensive knowledge enables you so well to judge, am I without a peculiar and personal motive.

I gratefully acknowledge that, in one of the most earnest and strenuous mental efforts I ever made, in my work on "The Nervous System," I owed to your cautions as to logical reasoning and careful induction, an anxiety at least, and a zeal in these respects, which, whatever success may have attended them, could not well be exceeded.

I have endeavoured to act conformably with the same cautions in the present work. He must be weak-minded indeed, who can seek for aught in philosophy but the discovery of truth; and he must be a coward who, believing he has discovered it, has any scruple to announce it.

ALEXANDER WALKER.



## INTRODUCTORY ADVERTISEMENT.

THERE is perhaps no subject more universally or more deeply interesting than that which is the chief subject of the present work. Yet no book, even pretending to science or accuracy, has hitherto appeared upon it. The forms and proportions of animals—as of the horse and the dog, have been examined in a hundred volumes. Not one has been devoted to woman, on whose physical and moral qualities the happiness of individuals and the perpetual improvement of the human race, are dependent.

The cause of this has been probably the neglect, on the part of individuals, to combine anatomical and physiological knowledge with the critical observation of the external forms of woman; and perhaps some repugnance to anthropological knowledge on the part of the public. The last obstacle, if ever it existed, is now gone by, as many circumstances show; and it will be the business of the author, in this work, to endeavour to obviate the former.



The present work, besides giving new views of the theory of beauty, and of its application to the arts, presents an analysis and classification of beauty in woman. A subsequent work will apply the principles here established to intermarriages and crossings among mankind, and will explain their results in relation to the happiness of individuals, and to the beauty and the freedom from insanity of their offspring. A final work will examine the relations of woman in society, will expose the extravagant hypotheses of writers on this subject who have been ignorant of anthropology, and will describe the reforms which the common interests of mankind demand in this respect.

It is now to be seen whether a branch of science, which is strictly founded on anatomy and physiology,—one which entangles the reader in no mystical and delusive hypothesis, and presents to him only indisputable facts,—one which is applicable to the subject most universally and deeply interesting to mankind, the critical judgment of female beauty, as founded on necessary functions,—and one which unravels the greater difficulties which that subject presents,—may not excite and permanently command a great degree of public interest.

A preliminary view of the importance of this



subject is given in the first chapter; the urgency of its discussion in relation to the interests of decency and morality is established in the second; and some useful cautions as to youth are offered in the third.

In regard to the importance of the subject, I may, even here, avail myself of the highest authorities.

Thomas More, speaking of the people of his commonwealth, says, "They do greatly wonder at the folly of all other nations, which, in *buying a colt* (whereas a little money is in hazard), be so chary and circumspect, that, though he be almost all bare, yet they will not buy him unless the saddle and all the harness be taken off—lest, under those coverings be hid some gall or sore. And yet, in *choosing a wife*, which shall be either pleasure or displeasure to them all their life after, they be so reckless, that, all the residue of the woman's body being covered with clothes, they esteem her scarcely by one hand breadth (for they can see no more but her face), and so to join her to them, not without great jeopardy of evil agreeing together—if anything in her body afterward should chance to offend and mislike them."<sup>1</sup>

Francis Bacon is of similar opinion.

<sup>1</sup> Utopia, Book II. Chap. viii.



Happily, the advancement of anthropological science in modern times, may, as is here shown, be so applied as to render quite unnecessary the *objectionable methods* proposed by both these philosophers, in order to carry their doctrines into practice.

*Shall I be blamed because I avail myself of the progress of knowledge to render all that these great men desired on this subject of easy attainment and inoffensive to woman? Shall I be blamed because I first facilitate that which the still further advancement of knowledge will inevitably render an every-day occurrence and the guide of the most important act of human life?—I care not.*

In the details as to female beauty, it will be seen how incorrectly Winckelmann says, "In female figures, the forms of beauty are not so different, nor the gradations so various as in those of males; and therefore in general they present no other difference than that which is dependent upon age. . . . Hence, in treating of female beauty, few observations occur as necessary to be made, and the study of the artist is more limited and more easy. . . . It is to be observed, that, in speaking of the resemblance of nude female figures, I speak solely of the body, without concluding from it that they also resemble



each other in the distinctive characters of the head, which are particularly marked in each, whether Goddess or Heroine."<sup>1</sup>—The differences, even in the bodies of females, are here shown to be both numerous and capable of distinct classification.

All the drawings which illustrate this volume, except the Frontispiece and Plates VIII., XV., XVI., XVI.*b* and XVIII., are from the pencil of Mr. Howard, executed at various times during his earlier studies at the Life-academy, and selected for this work from his drawing books. It would be impertinent to eulogize drawings by an artist who inherits so much of the spirit of the ancients.

Plate XVI. has been lithographed, and Plates XV. and XVI.*b* have been both drawn and lithographed, by Mr. M. Gauci, the first of our lithographers, equally distinguished by correct anatomical knowledge, learning in ancient art, and exquisite taste.

<sup>1</sup> "Nelle figure femminili, la bellezza non ha sì diverse forme e sì varj gradi, come nelle virili ; anzi generalmente altra differenza non v' è, fuor di quella che proviene dall' età. . . . Indi è che, trattando della femminile bellezza, poche cose ci si offrono da osservare, e più limitato e facile è lo studio dell' artista. . . . Osservisi che, ov' io parlo del somigliarsi che fanno tra di loro le figure muliebri ignude, intendo di parlare della sola corporatura, senza che quindi abbia a conchiudersi che pur si somigliano ne' caratteri distintivi della testa, i quali in ciascheduna sì delle dee che delle eroine vengono particolarmente indicati."—*Storia delle Arti*.



It is needless to say that the productions of such a man needed no superintendence of the author.

The rest of the drawings Mr. Lane engaged to represent by lithography, with all the skill of which he is capable, and in his very best manner. That he has conscientiously done so, the author cannot doubt; and indeed he knows that, in a few instances, Mr. Lane has even made out some subordinate parts which were left intentionally unfinished by the distinguished painter. Still Mr. Lane's lithographs present some errors, which are described in subsequent notes, because that appeared to be due both to the painter, and to the author's intention. The blame of these, however, the author takes entirely upon himself, being deceived by the superficial beauty of the lithographs when on the stone, and rendered thereby less quick in detecting any deviation of the lithographer.

It is right to observe, that this work has nothing to do with an early production of the writer, a consciousness of the small value of which prevented his attaching his name to it, which he now knows to be utterly worthless, and which has since been vamped up with things which are more worthless still.

The most valuable features of the present work are



entirely new and original. Others are such as the writer thought not unworthy of preservation from earlier essays. He has also, throughout this work, adopted from other writers, with no other alteration than accuracy required, every view, opinion, or remark, which he thought applicable to a department of science, of which all the great features are new.

Such being the case, he thinks it just, at once to himself and others, to indicate here the only points on which he can himself lay any claim to originality. These are as follows :—

The more complete establishment of the truth that, in relation to man and woman in particular, beauty is the external sign of goodness in organization and function, and thence its importance.—Chapter I., and the work generally.

The showing that the discussion of this subject, though involving the examination of the naked figure, is urgent in relation to decency (the theory of which is discussed), morality, and happy intermarriage.—Chapter II.

The showing that the ancient religion was the cause of the perfection of the fine arts in Greece, by its personification of simple attributes or virtues, as objects of adoration.—Chapter II.

The exposition of the nature, the kinds, and the



characteristics of beauty; and of some errors of Burke, Knight, etc., on this subject.—Chapter IV.

The showing that there are elements of beauty invariable in their nature and effect, and that these are modified and complicated in advancing from simple to complex beings, and the arts relating to them.—Chapter VI.

The pointing out these elements of beauty, and their mode of operation in inanimate beings; and the errors of Knight and Alison on this subject.—Sect. I., Chapter VI.

The pointing out these elements, and others which are superadded, in living beings; and the errors of Alison on this subject.—Sect. II., Chapter VI.

The pointing out these elements, and others which are further superadded, in thinking beings; and the errors of Burke and Knight on this subject.—Sect. III., Chapter VI.

The exposition of these elements, as differing, or variously modified, in the useful, ornamental, and intellectual arts, respectively; and some remarks on ornament in architecture, and in female dress.—Sect. IV., Chapter VI.

The explanation of the nature of the picturesque, after the failure of Knight and Price in this respect.—Sect. I., Appendix to Preceding Chapters.



The vindication of the doctrine of Hobbes as to the cause of laughter; and exposition of the errors of Campbell and Beattie on this subject.—Sect. II., Appendix.

The explanation of the cause of the pleasure received from representations exciting pity; and of the errors of Burke, etc., on that subject.—Sect. III., Appendix.

The arrangement of anatomy and physiology, and the application of the principles of these sciences to the distinguishing and judging of beauty.—Chapter VII.

The explanation of the difference in the beauty of the two sexes even in the same country.—Chapter IX.

Various arguments establishing the standard of beauty in woman; and the exposure of the sophistry of Knight, on this subject.—Chapter X.

The showing, by the preceding arrangements, that the ancient temperaments are partial or complex views of anthropological phenomena.—Chapter XI. et seq.

The description of the first species of beauty, or that of the locomotive system, and of its varieties, as founded on examination of structure.—Chapter XII.



The description of the second species of beauty, or that of the nutritive system, and of its varieties, as founded on examination of structure.—Chapter XIII.

The description of the third species of beauty, or that of the thinking system, and of its varieties, as founded on examination of structure.—Chapter XIV.

The explanation of the cause of the deformity produced by the obliquely placed eyes of the Chinese, etc.—Chapter XV.

The explanation of the mode in which the action of the muscles of the face becomes physiognomically expressive.—Ibid.

The explanation of the physiognomical character of the different kinds of the hair.—Ibid.

The explanation of the cause of the different effects of the same face, even in a state of repose.—Ibid.

The indication of the faulty feature, and its gradual increase, even in beautiful faces.—Ibid.

The exposition of the different organization of Greek and Roman heads.—Ibid.

The explanation of the combinations and transitions of beauty.—Chapter XVI.

The explanation of the numerical, geometrical, and harmonic methods of proportion, employed by the ancient Greeks.—Chapter XVII.



Some remarks on character, expression, and detail in art.—Ibid.

Some observations on the Greek forehead, actual as well as ideal.—Chapter XVIII.

The explanation of the reason of the Greek ideal rule, as to the proportion between the forehead and the other parts of the face.—Ibid.

The explanation of the reason of the Greek ideal rule, as to the profile of the forehead and nose, or as to the direction of the mesial line which they form, and the exposition of Winckelmann's blunder respecting it.—Ibid.

The explanation of the reason why the Greeks suppressed all great degrees of impassioned expression.—Ibid.

The mere indication of the Greek idealizations as applied to the nutritive and locomotive systems, and the explanation of the latter in the Apollo.—Ibid.

The replies to the objections of Burke and Alison, as to ideal beauty.—Ibid.

The enunciation of the ideal in attitude.—Ibid.

Various views as to the Venus de Medici, the conformation of the nose; and the connexion of odour with love, in animals and plants.—Chapter XIX.

Some remarks on the Venus de Medici.—Ibid.



The pointing out and explanation of various defects in beauty.—Chapter XX.

The pointing out and explanation of various external indications of figure, beauty, mind, habits and age.—Chapter XXI.

The writer may possibly be mistaken as to the originality of one or two of these points ; but, leaving the critical reader to deduct as many of these as it is in his power to do, enough of novelty would remain for the writer's ambition, in this respect, if he had done no more than exposed the errors of Burke, Knight, Alison, etc., and established the true doctrine of beauty, in the first chapters,—given an analysis and classification of beauty in woman, in the chapters which follow,—and applied this to the fine arts, and solved the difficulty of Leonardo da Vinci, etc., in the last chapters.

## CONTENTS.

### CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
IMPORTANCE OF THE SUBJECT, - - - - -	25

### CHAPTER II.

URGENCY OF THE DISCUSSION OF THIS SUBJECT IN RELATION TO THE INTERESTS OF DECENCY AND MORALITY, - - - - -	34
---	----

### CHAPTER III.

CAUTIONS TO YOUTH, - - - - -	47
------------------------------	----

### CHAPTER IV.

NATURE OF BEAUTY, - - - - -	57
-----------------------------	----

### CHAPTER V.

STANDARD OF TASTE IN BEAUTY, - - - - -	66
--	----

### CHAPTER VI.

THE ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY, - - - - -	80
SECTION I.—Elements of Beauty in Inanimate Beings,	81
SECTION II.—Elements of Beauty in Living Beings, -	94
SECTION III.—Elements of Beauty in Thinking Beings,	99



	PAGE
SECTION IV.—Elements of Beauty as employed in	
Objects of Art, - - - -	108
Beauty of Useful Objects, - - - -	109
Beauty of Ornamental Objects, - - - -	112
Beauty of Intellectual Objects, - - - -	117
Summary of this Chapter, - - - -	123
Appendix to the Preceding Chapters, - - - -	126
SECTION I.—Nature of the Picturesque, - - - -	126
SECTION II.—Cause of Laughter, - - - -	128
SECTION III.—Cause of the Pleasure received from	
Representations exciting Pity, - - - -	133
CHAPTER VII.	
ANATOMICAL AND PHYSIOLOGICAL PRINCIPLES, - - - -	141
CHAPTER VIII.	
OF THE AGES OF WOMAN IN RELATION TO BEAUTY, - - - -	153
CHAPTER IX.	
OF THE CAUSES OF BEAUTY IN WOMAN, - - - -	166
CHAPTER X.	
OF THE STANDARD OF BEAUTY IN WOMAN, - - - -	170
CHAPTER XI.	
OF THE THREE SPECIES OF FEMALE BEAUTY GENERALLY	
VIEWED, - - - - -	184
CHAPTER XII.	
FIRST SPECIES OF BEAUTY : BEAUTY OF THE LOCOMOTIVE	
SYSTEM, - - - - -	188



CONTENTS.	21
	PAGE
First Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty,	190
Second Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	195
Third Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	196
CHAPTER XIII.	
SECOND SPECIES OF BEAUTY : BEAUTY OF THE NUTRITIVE SYSTEM, - - - - -	201
First Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty,	205
Second Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	207
Third Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	209
CHAPTER XIV.	
THIRD SPECIES OF BEAUTY : BEAUTY OF THE THINKING SYSTEM, - - - - -	221
First Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty,	222
Second Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	223
Third Variety or Modification of this Species of Beauty, - - - - -	225
CHAPTER XV.	
BEAUTY OF THE FACE IN PARTICULAR, - - - - -	233
CHAPTER XVI.	
COMBINATIONS AND TRANSITIONS OF THE THREE SPECIES OF FEMALE BEAUTY, - - - - -	248
CHAPTER XVII.	
PROPORTION, CHARACTER, EXPRESSION, ETC., - - - - -	253



## CHAPTER XVIII.

THE GREEK IDEAL BEAUTY, - - - - -	277
-----------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIX.

THE IDEAL OF FEMALE BEAUTY, - - - - -	308
---------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XX.

DEFECTS OF BEAUTY, - - - - -	321
Defects of the Locomotive System, - - - - -	321
Defects of the Vital System, - - - - -	324
Defects of the Mental System, - - - - -	327

## CHAPTER XXI.

EXTERNAL INDICATIONS ; OR ART OF DETERMINING THE PRECISE FIGURE, THE DEGREE OF BEAUTY, THE MIND, THE HABITS, AND THE AGE OF WOMEN, NOTWITHSTANDING THE AIDS AND DISGUISES OF DRESS, - - - - -	330
External Indications of Figure, - - - - -	330
External Indications of Beauty, - - - - -	333
External Indications of Mind, - - - - -	336
External Indications of Habits, - - - - -	337
External Indications of Age, - - - - -	339

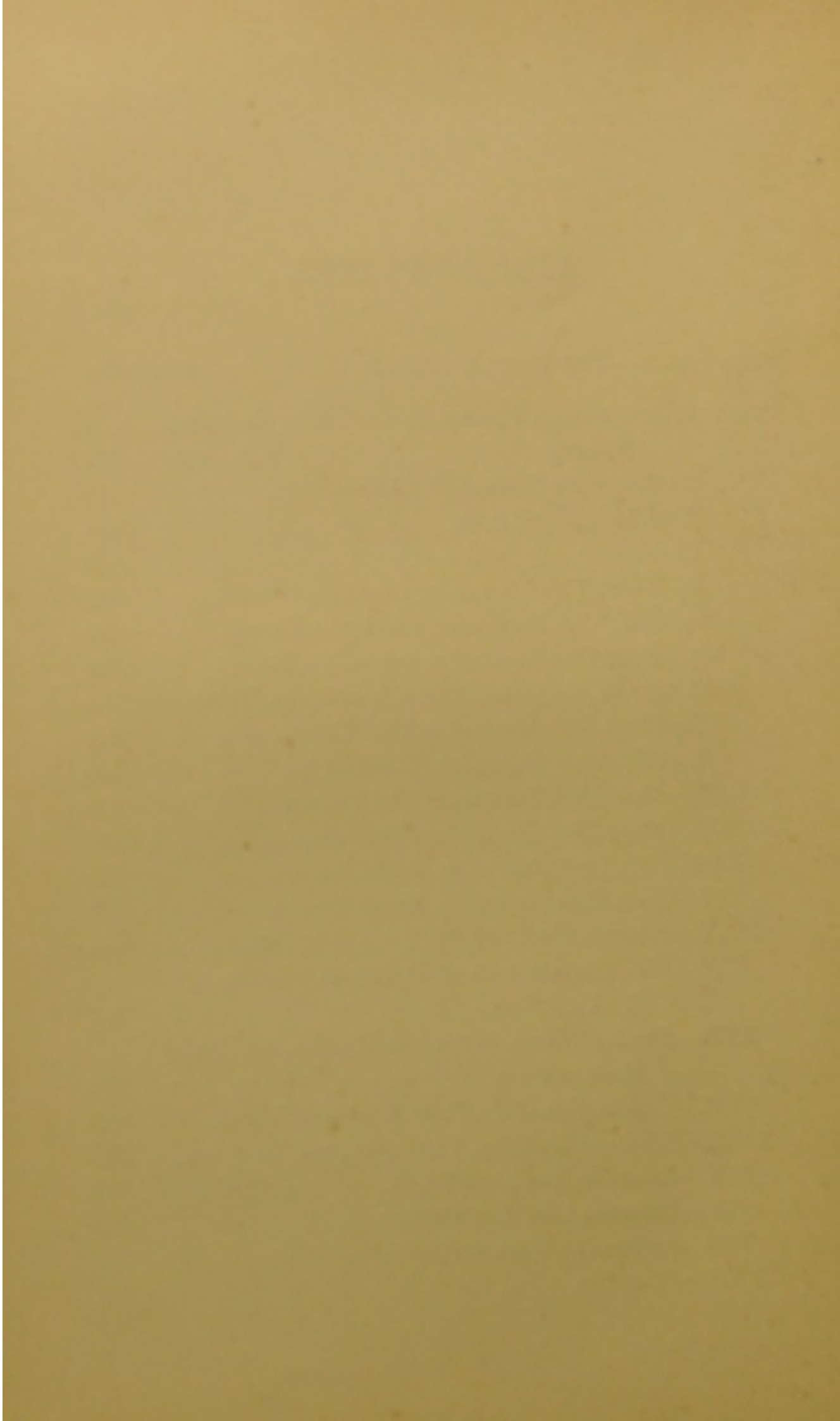
## LIST OF PLATES.

FRONTISPIECE.—THE VENUS DE MEDICI.

*Frontispiece.*

PLATE		PAGE
I.—Locomotive System Predominating in Young Women, - - - - -	<i>to face page</i>	157
II.—The same System still most apparent, - - -		159
III.—The Age of Return, - - - - -		164
IV.—Age, - - - - -		165
V.—Front View illustrating Locomotive Beauty, -		190
VI.—Side View illustrating Locomotive Beauty, -		191
VII.—Back View illustrating Locomotive Beauty, -		193
VIII.—Diana, the Greek Ideal of Locomotive Beauty, -		199
IX.—Front View illustrating Vital Beauty, - -		204
X.—Side View illustrating Vital Beauty, - -		206
XI.—Back View illustrating Vital Beauty, - -		208
XII.—Front View illustrating Mental Beauty, - -		222
XIII.—Side View illustrating Mental Beauty, - -		223
XIV.—Back View illustrating Mental Beauty, - -		225
XV.—Minerva, the Greek Ideal of Mental Beauty, -		230
XVI.—The Three Species of Beauty as affecting the Head and Face, - - - - -		247
XVIb.—Heads of Diana, Venus and Minerva, the Greek Ideals of these, - - - - -		253
XVII.—Combination of the Three Species of Beauty, -		254
XVIII.—Effects of Gestation, Parturition, and Lactation,		320
XIX.—Excessive Breadth of Trunk, - - - - -		321
XX.—Excessive Length of Waist, - - - - -		325
XXI.—Aridness or Want of Plumpness, - - - - -		326
XXII.—Flaccidity, - - - - -		327





ANALYSIS AND CLASSIFICATION  
OF  
BEAUTY IN WOMAN.

---

CHAPTER I.

IMPORTANCE OF THE SUBJECT.

It is observed by Home, in his "Elements of Criticism," that a perception of beauty in external objects, is requisite to attach us to them; that it greatly promotes industry, by promoting a desire to possess things that are beautiful; and that it further joins with utility, in prompting us to embellish our houses and enrich our fields. "These, however," he says, "are but slight effects, compared with the connexions which are formed among individuals in society by means of this singular mechanism: the qualifications of the head and heart are undoubtedly the most solid and most permanent foundations of such connexions; but as external beauty lies more in view, and is more obvious to the bulk of mankind than the qualities now mentioned, the sense of beauty possesses the more universal influence in forming these connexions:



at any rate, it concurs in an eminent degree with mental qualifications, to produce social intercourse, mutual good-will, and consequently mutual aid and support, which are the life of society."

Dr. Pritchard similarly observes, that "the perception of beauty is the chief principle in every country which directs men in their marriages."

Advancing a step further, Sir Anthony Carlisle thinks a taste for beauty worthy of being cultivated. "Man," he observes, "dwells with felicit yeven on ideal female attributes, and in imagination discovers beauties and perfections which solace his wearied hours, far beyond any other resource within the scope of human life. It cannot, then, be unwise to cultivate and refine this natural tendency, and to enhance if possible these charms of life. We increase and heighten all our pleasures by awakening and cultivating reflections which do not exist in a state of ignorance. Thus the botanist perceives elegances in plants and flowers unknown and unfelt by the vulgar, and the landscape painter revels in natural or imaginary scenery with feelings which are unknown to the multitude. It would be absurd to pretend that the more exquisite and more deeply attractive beauty of women is not worthy of more profound, as well as more universal cultivation."

Such are the observations of philosophical anthropologists, who, nevertheless, in these remarks, consider mere physical beauty, independent of its connexion with corresponding functions or moral qualities.

If, however, the external beauty of woman, calculated as it is to flatter the most experienced eye, limited its effect to a local impression, to an optical



enjoyment, the sentiment of beauty would be far from having all its extent and value. Happily, ideas of goodness, of suitableness, of sympathy, of progressive perfection, and of mutual happiness, are by an intimate and inevitable association, connected with the first impression made by the sight of beauty.

The foundation of this feeling is well expressed by Dr. Pritchard, in his observation "that the idea of beauty of person, is synonymous with that of health and perfect organization."

Hence, it has been observed, the great ideal models of beauty please us, not merely because their forms are disposed and combined so as to affect agreeably the organ of sight, but because their exterior appears to correspond to admirable qualities, and to announce an elevation in the condition of humanity. Such do the Greek monuments appear to physiologists and philosophical artists whose minds pass rapidly from the beauty of forms to that locomotive, vital, or mental excellence which it compels them to suppose.

Goodness and beauty in woman will accordingly be found to bear a strict relation to each other; and the latter will be seen always to be the external sign of the former.

There are, however, (slightly to anticipate what must afterwards be explained,) different kinds both of beauty and of goodness, which are confounded by vulgar observers; or rather there are beauty and goodness belonging to different systems of which the body is composed, and which ought never to be confounded with each other.

Where, consequently, one of these kinds of beauty and of goodness is wanting, even in a remarkable degree, others may be found; and, as the vulgar do not



distinguish, it is this which leads to the gross error that these qualities have no strict relations to their signs.

Want of beauty, then, in any one of the systems of which the body is composed, indicates want of goodness only in that system ; but it is not less a truth, and scarcely of less importance, on that account. I will now illustrate this by brief examples.

There may, in any individual, exist deformity of limbs ; and this will assuredly indicate want of goodness in the locomotive system, or that of general motion. There may exist coarseness of skin, or paleness of complexion, and either of these will as certainly indicate want of goodness in the vital system or that of nutrition. There may exist a malformation of the brain, externally evident ; and this no less certainly will indicate want of goodness in the mental system, or that of thought.

It follows that even the different kinds and combinations of beauty, which are the objects of taste to different persons, are founded upon the same general principle of organic superiority. Nay, even the preferences which, in beauty, appear to depend most on fancy, depend in reality on that cause ; and the impression which every degree and modification of beauty makes on mankind has, as a fundamental rule, only their sentiment, more or less delicate and just, of physical advantage in relation to each individual. Such is the foundation of all our sentiments of admiration and of love.

The existence or non-existence of these advantages, and the power of determining this, or the judgment of beauty, are therefore of transcendent importance to individuals and to families. Such judgment can be



attained by analysis and classification alone. Nothing, therefore, can more nearly affect all human interests than that analysis and classification of beauty which are here proposed.

To place beyond a doubt, and to illustrate more minutely, the extraordinary importance of this subject, as regards advantages real to the species, I may anticipate some of the more minute applications of my doctrine.

If, in the locomotive system, it is especially from the muscles connected with the pelvis being more developed in woman than in man, that result much of the delicacy of her form, the ease and grace of its movements, and its easily adapting itself to great and remarkable changes,—of what importance must not be the ability to determine, even by walk or gesture, the existence of this condition !

If, in the vital system, the elasticity and freshness of the skin are the characteristics of health, and their absence warns us that the condition of woman is unfavourable to the plan of nature relatively to the maintenance of the species,—or, if the capacity of the pelvis and the consequent breadth of the haunches, are necessary to all those functions which are most essentially feminine, impregnation, gestation, and parturition, without danger either to parent or to child,—of what extreme importance must not be the ability to determine this with certainty and ease !

If, in the mental system, the capacity and delicacy of the organs of sense, and the softness and mobility of the nervous system, are necessary to the vivid and varying sensibility of woman,—if it is in consequence of this, that woman is enabled to act on man by the



continual observation of all that can captivate his imagination or secure his affection, and by the irresistible seduction of her manners,—if it is these qualities which enable her to accommodate herself to his taste, to yield without constraint even to the caprice of the moment, and to seize the time when observations, made as it were accidentally, may produce the effect which she desires,—if it is by these means that she fulfils her first duty, namely, to please him to whom she has united her days, and to attach him to her and to home, by rendering both delightful,—if all this is the case, of what inexpressible importance must not be the ability to determine, in each individual, the possession of the power and the will to produce such effects !

If,—descending to still more minute inquiries,—external indications as to figure are required as to parts concealed by drapery,—if such indications would obviate deception even with regard to those parts of the figure which are more exposed to observation by the closer adaptation of dress,—if, even when the face is seen, the deception as to the degree of beauty is such that a correct estimate of it is perhaps never formed,—if indications as to mind may be derived from many external circumstances,—if external indications as to the personal habits of women are both numerous and interesting,—if such indications even of age and health are sometimes essential,—if all this be the case, let the reader say what other object of human inquiry exceeds this in importance.

Let us not then deceive ourselves respecting the bases of those expressions which one sex experiences from the sight of the other. It is evidently nothing



else than the more or less delicate and just perception of a certain conformity of means with a want which has been created by nature, and which must be satisfied.

“It is very obvious,” says Dr. Pritchard, “that this peculiarity in the constitution of man, must have considerable effects on the physical character of the race, and that it must act as a constant principle of improvement, supplying the place in our own kind of the beneficial control [in the crossing of races] which we exercise over the brute creation.” And he adds, “This is probably the final cause for which the instinctive perception of human beauty was implanted by Providence in our nature.”

We need not wonder then that the Greeks should have preferred beauty to all other advantages, should have placed it immediately after virtue in the order of their affections, or should have made it an object of worship.

Even the practical application of this principle to the improvement of the human race is not a matter of conjecture. We have seen both families and nations ameliorated by the means which it affords. Of this, the Turks are a striking example. Nothing, therefore, can better deserve the researches of the physiologist, or the exertions of the philanthropist, than the fact that there are laws, of which we have yet only a glimpse, according to which we may influence the amelioration of the human race in a manner the most extensive and profound, by acting according to a uniform and uninterrupted system.

Well might Cabanis exclaim, “After having occupied ourselves so curiously with the means of rendering more beautiful and better the races of animals or



of plants which are useful or agreeable,—after having remodelled a hundred times that of horses and dogs,—after having transplanted, grafted, cultivated, in all manners, fruits and flowers,—how shameful is it to have totally neglected the race of man! As if it affected us less nearly! as if it were more essential to have large and strong oxen than vigorous and healthy men, highly odorous peaches, or finely striped tulips, than wise and good citizens.”<sup>1</sup>

I actually know a man who is so deeply interested in the doctrine of crossing, that every hour of his life is devoted to the improvement of a race of bantam fowls and curious pigeons, and who yet married a mad woman, whom he confines in a garret, and by whom he has some insane progeny.

Let it not be imagined that the discovery of the precise laws of crossing or intermarriage, and the best direction of physical living forces, in relation both to the vital faculties and to those of the mind, upon which knowledge and skill may operate for the improvement of our race, is a matter of difficulty.

It will be shown in this work, that there exist not only an influence of beauty and defects on offspring, but peculiar laws regulating the resemblance of progeny to parents—laws which regard the mode in

<sup>1</sup> “Après nous être occupés si curieusement des moyens de rendre plus belles et meilleures les races des animaux, ou des plantes utiles et agréables; après avoir remanié cent fois celle des chevaux et des chiens; après avoir transplanté, greffé, travaillé de toutes les manières, les fruits et les fleurs, combien n’est il pas honteux de négliger totalement la race de l’homme! Comme si elle nous touchait de moins près! comme s’il était plus essentiel d’avoir des bœufs grands et forts que des hommes vigoureux et sains; des pêches bien odorantes, ou des tulipes bien tachetées, que des citoyens sages et bons!”



which the organization of parents affects that of children, or regulates the organs which each parent respectively bestows.

It will accordingly be shown, that, as, on the size, form, and proportion of the various organs, depend their functions, the importance of such laws is indescribable,—whether we regard intermarriages, and that immunity from mental or bodily disease which, when well directed, they may insure,—or the determination of the parentage of a child, or the education of children, in conformity with their faculties,—or the employment of men in society.

I conclude this brief view in the words of the writer just quoted: “It is assuredly time for us to attempt to do for ourselves that which we have done so successfully for several of our companions in existence, to review and correct this work of nature—a noble enterprise, which truly merits all our cares, and which nature itself appears to have especially recommended to us by the sympathies and the powers which it has given us.”



## CHAPTER II.

### URGENCY OF THE DISCUSSION OF THIS SUBJECT IN RELATION TO THE INTERESTS OF DECENCY AND MORALITY.

It has now been seen that beauty results from the perfection, chiefly of external forms, and the correspondence of that perfection with superiority of internal functions; on the more or less perfect perception of which, love, intermarriage, and the condition of our race is dependent.

This mode of considering the elements, the nature, and the consequences of beauty, is equally applicable to the two sexes; but, in woman, the form of the species presents peculiar modifications.

In this work, it is the form of woman which is chosen for examination, because it will be found, by the contrast which is perpetually necessary, to involve a knowledge of the form of man, because it is best calculated to ensure attention from men, and because it is men who, exercising the power of selection, have alone the ability thus to ensure individual happiness and to ameliorate the species, which are the objects of this work. Let it not be imagined that the views now taken are less favourable to woman than to man. Whatever ensures the happiness of one ensures that of the other; and as the variety of forms and functions



in man requires as many varieties in woman, it is not to exclusion or rejection with regard to woman that this work tends, but to a reasoned guidance in a man's choice ; to the greater suitableness of all intermarriages, and to the greater happiness of woman as well as man, both in herself and in her progeny.

But notwithstanding the importance of any work which is in any degree calculated to promote such an object, some will tell us that decency forbids nudity, and the analysis of female beauty on which it can alone be founded.—I shall, on the contrary, show that decency demands this analysis, that the interests of nature, of truth, of the arts, and of morality demand it.

Our present notions of sexual decency belong more to art than to nature, and may be divided into artificial and artful decencies.

Artificial decencies are illustrated in the habits of various nations. They have their origin in cold countries, where clothing is necessary, and where a deviation from the degree or mode of clothing constitutes indecency. They could not exist in hot climates, where clothing is scarcely possible.

In hot climates, natural decency can alone exist; and there is not, I believe, one traveller in such countries whose works do not prove that natural decency there exists as much as in cold countries.

In exemplification of this, I make a single quotation: it would be easy to make thousands.—Burchell, speaking of the Bushmen Hottentots, says, “ The natural bashful reserve of youth and innocence is to be seen as much among these savages, as in more polished nations ; and the young girls, though wanting but little of being perfectly naked, evince as just



a sense of modesty as the most rigid and careful education could have given them."

In mild climates, the half clothed or slightly clothed people appear to be somewhat at a loss what to do. Fond of decorations, like all savage or half civilized people, they seem to be divided between the tatooing and painting of hot climates, and the clothing of cold ones; and when they adopt the latter, they do not rightly know what to conceal.

The works of all travellers afford the same illustrations of this fact. I quote one. Kotzebue describes the custom among the Tartar women of Kasan, of flying or of concealing their countenance from the sight of a stranger. The necessity of conforming to this custom threw into great embarrassment a young woman who was obliged to pass several times before the German traveller. She at first concealed her face with her hands; but, soon embarrassed by that attitude, she removed the veil which covered her bosom, and threw it over her face. That, adds Kotzebue, was, as we say, uncovering Paul to cover Jaques: the bosom remained naked. To cover that, she next showed what should have been concealed; and if anything escaped from her hands, she stooped, and, then, says Kotzebue, I saw both one and the other.

In colder or more uncertain climes, the greatest degree of covering constitutes the greatest degree of artificial decency: fashion and decency are confounded. Among old fashioned people, of whom a good example may be found in old country women of the middle class in England, it is indecent to be seen with the head unclothed; such a woman is terrified at the chance of being seen in that condition; and if



intruded on at such a time, she shrieks with terror, and flies to conceal herself. In the equally polished dandy of the metropolis, it is indecent to be seen without gloves. Which of these respectable creatures is the most enlightened, I do not take upon me to say; but I believe that the majority of suffrages would be in favour of the old woman.

So entirely are these decencies artificial, that any number of them may easily be created, not merely with regard to man or woman, but even with regard to domesticated animals. If it should please some persons partially to clothe horses, cows, or dogs, it would ere long be felt that their appearing in the streets without trowsers or aprons was grossly indecent. We might thus create a real feeling of indecency, the perception of a new impurity, which would take the place of the former absence of all impure thought, and once established, the evil would be as real as our whims have made it in other respects.

Moral feeling is deeply injured by this substitution of impure thoughts, however fancifully founded, for pure ones, or rather for the entire absence of thought about worthless things. Artificial crimes are thus made, which are not the less real because artificial; for if aught of this kind is believed to be right, there is weakness or wrong in its violation. But violated it must be, if it were but accidentally.

To corrupt minds, this very violation of artificial decency, in the case of woman, affords the zest for the sake of which many of these decencies seem to have been instituted; and thus are created the artful decencies.

The purpose and the zest of artful decency is well illustrated by coquetry. Coquetry adopts a general



concealment, which it well knows can alone give a sensual and seductive power to momentary exposure. Coquetry eschews permanent exposure as the bane of sensuality and seduction; and where these are great, as among the women of Spain, the concealment of dress is increased, even in warm climates. Nothing can throw greater light than this does on the nature of these decencies.

That coquetry has well calculated her procedure, does not admit of a doubt. She appeals to imagination, which she knows will spread charms over even ugly forms; she seeks the concealment under which sensuality and lust are engendered; and, in marriage, she at last lifts the veil which gratifies only to disgust, and repays a sensual hallucination by years of misery.

Ought religion to claim the right of saying grace to such unveiling of concealment and the sensual feast that follows it? Ought religion to profit by the impurities of sexual association? Marriage is a civil ceremony in other countries, even in Scotland. Such profane and profitable sanctions have nothing to do with primitive Christianity: they are abhorrent to its letter as well as to its spirit. But worldly and profitable religion is connected in business with government, under the firm of Church and State, and drives a thriving trade, in which the junior partner is contented with the profit arising from the common acts of life, while the senior one draws much of his living from its sexual acts?<sup>1</sup>

What is said here, is no argument for living nudity: that, our climate and our customs forbid; and, in so

<sup>1</sup> I do not wish to be forced into any discussion on this last point. But if necessary, I shall not decline it.



doing, we can only regret that they are unfavourable to natural purity; while perfect familiarity with the figure ensures that feeling in the highest degree.

A distinguished artist informs me that greater modesty is nowhere to be seen than at the Life-Academy; and it was an observation of the great Flaxman, that "the students, in entering the Academy, seemed to hang up their passions with their hats." I can, from personal experience, give the same testimony in behalf of medical students at the dissecting rooms. The familiarity of both these classes with natural beauty leads them only to seek to inform their minds and to purify their taste.

Sinibaldi observes, "that nothing is more injurious to morals and to health, than the incitements of the women who in such numbers walk our streets," and that "the laws as to offences against morals ought certainly to affect them the moment their language or actions can be deemed offensive." But it is not to those who are critically conversant with the highest beauty of the human figure, that defective forms, ill painted skins, rude manners, and contagious diseases, are at all seductive.

Nothing, then, can be more favourable to sexual virtue than the decoration of every house with the beautiful copies of the glorious works of ancient Greece; and it is only humiliating to think that what has been so extensively done in this respect in the best houses, is less owing to our own taste than to the poor wanderers from Lucca or Barga. Experiment on this subject is peculiarly easy in London: let any one spend an hour in the shop of the very able Mr. Sarti, of Dean-street, where he will meet the most liberal attention, and let him ask himself,



in coming out, whether his moral feeling, as well as his taste, is not improved.

Those who cannot make this experiment, will perhaps be satisfied with the assurance of Hogarth, who says, "The rest of the body, not having advantages in common with the face, would soon satiate the eye, were it to be as constantly exposed, nor would it have more effect than a marble statue." Surely this is decisive enough in its way! Now, let them mark what follows. "But," he continues, "when it is artfully clothed and decorated, the mind at every turn resumes its imaginary pursuits concerning it. Thus, if I may be allowed a simile, the angler chooses not to see the fish he angles for, until it is fairly caught." He meant, of course—"the *fish* chooses not to see the *angler*, until it is fairly caught!"

Be it known, then, to all, even the most aristocratic as to sexual association—I say the most aristocratic, and not the most religious, because religion is in some countries made the pander to aristocracy—be it known that the critical judgment and pure taste for beauty are the sole protection against low and degrading connexions.

Home observes that "the sense of beauty does not tend to advance the interests of society, but when in a due mien with respect to strength. Love in particular, arising from a sense of beauty, loses, when excessive, its sociable character: the appetite for gratification, prevailing over affection for the beloved object, is ungovernable, and tends violently to its end, regardless of the misery that must follow. Love in this state is no longer a sweet agreeable passion: it becomes painful, like hunger or thirst, and produceth no happiness but in the instant of fruition. This



discovery suggests a most important lesson, that moderation in our desires and appetites, which fits us for doing our duty, contributes at the same time the most to happiness : even social passions, when moderate, are more pleasant than when they swell beyond proper bounds." Payne Knight says, "When, at the age of puberty, animal desire obtrudes itself on a mind already qualified to feel and enjoy the charms of intellectual merit, the imagination immediately begins to form pictures of perfection, by exaggerating and combining in one hypothetic object every excellence that can possibly belong to the whole sex ; and the first individual that meets the eye, with any exterior signs of any of these ideal excellences, is immediately decorated with them all, by the creative magic of a vigorous and fertile fancy. Hence she instantaneously becomes the object of the most fervent affection, which is as instantaneously cooled by possession : for, as it was not the object herself, but a false idea of her raised in heated imagination, that called forth all the lover's raptures, all immediately vanish at the detection of his delusion ; and a degree of disgust proportioned to the disappointment, of which it is the inevitable consequence, instantly succeeds. Thus it happens that what are called love-matches are seldom or ever happy."

Now, nothing can more effectually prevent even the existence of the mania described by these two philosophers than a critical judgment and a pure taste for beauty, which again therefore are the sole protection against low and degrading connexions.

A just sense of this truth will give high encouragement to sculpture and painting—arts which may everywhere be looked upon as the best tests, as well



as the best records, of civilization. Such encouragement they need in truth; for the monstrous monopoly of landed property and the accumulation of wealth in few hands—the great aim of our political economy, renders art poor indeed.

I am aware that the vulgar among artists think otherwise; from the few rich they obtain employment; and, like the dog with his master, they look not beyond the hand that doles out their pittance. But the rich are few; and their palaces are already filled. A diffusion of wealth alone can give encouragement to art; nor can this ever be, while British industry is crushed under the weight of enormous taxation.

Having removed some objections to art, I would add a few words to artists on the cause of the fine arts in Greece, from a paper I, two years ago, contributed to a monthly periodical.<sup>1</sup>

That the mythology of Greece had an influence over its arts, is generally granted; but I am not aware, that it has either been shown to be exclusively their cause, or that its mode of operation has ever explained.

Religion, I may observe, is as natural to man as his weakness and helplessness. There is not one of its systems, not even the vilest, which has not afforded him consolation. Of its higher and better systems, some are equally admirable for the grandeur and the beauty of the truths on which they are founded, the simplicity and the elegance of their ostensible forms, the power and applicability of their symbols, and their sympathy with and control over the affections and the imagination.

<sup>1</sup> The Magazine of the Fine Arts, No. 6, for October, 1833.



These high characteristics peculiarly distinguished the religion of ancient Greece.

By bigots, we are indeed told, that, though Homer is our model in epic, Anacreon in lyric, and Æschylus in dramatic poetry,—though the music of Greece doubtless corresponded to its poetry in beauty, pathos, and grandeur,—though the mere wreck of her sculpture is never overlooked in modern war and negotiation,—though the mere sight of her ruined Parthenon is more than a reward for the fatigue or the peril of a journey to the eternal city,—though these products of art are the test of the highest civilization which the world has witnessed,—though to these chiefly Rome owed the little civilization of which she was capable, and we ourselves the circumstance that, at this hour, we are not, like our ancestors, covered only with blue paint or the skins of brutes,—though all this is true as to the arts of Greece, we are told that, by the strangest exception, the religion of Greece was a base superstition.

That religion, however, was the creator of these arts. They not only could not have existed without it, but they never can be called into existence by any other religion.

The personification of *simple* Beauty, Valour, Wisdom, or Omnipotence, in Venus, Mars, Minerva, or Jupiter, respectively, were essential to the *purity* and the *power* of expression of these attributes in the worship of the deities to whom they respectively belonged. The union of absolute beauty and valour in one being, is not more impossible than their union in one expression of homage and admiration. Delicacy, elegance, and grace were as characteristic of the statue, the worship and temple of the goddess of



beauty, as attributes nearly opposite to these were of the statue, the worship and the temple of the god of war. Thus were the fine arts in Greece created by the personification of *simple* attributes or virtues as objects of adoration; and thus is excellence in these fine arts incapable of being elicited by any system of religion in which more than one attribute is ascribed to the god.

They must be ignorant indeed of the wonderful people of whom I now speak, who allege, that the Greeks worshipped the mere statue of the god, and not the personified virtue. Even the history of their beautiful religion proves the reverse. It was the tomb which became the altar, and retained nearly its form. It was the expression of love, of regret, and of veneration for departed virtue, which became divine adoration; and, as individual acts, and even individual names, were ultimately lost in one transcendent attribute, so were individual forms and features, in its purified and ideal representation. Here, then, instead of finding the worship of men or of their representations, we discover a gradual advance from beings to attributes—from mortal man to eternal virtue, and a corresponding and suitable advance from simple veneration to divine adoration.

When, in great emergencies of the state, the sages and the soldiers of Athens, in solemn procession repaired to the temple of Minerva, turned their faces toward the statue of the goddess, and prostrated themselves in spirit before her—let the beautiful history of Grecian science tell, whether in the statue, they worshipped the mere marble structure, or, in its forms and attributes, beheld and adored a personification of eternal truth and wisdom, and so prepared



the mind for deeds which have rendered Greece for ever illustrious. Or, when returning from a Marathon, or a Salamis, the warriors of Athens, followed by trains of maidens, and matrons, and old men, returned thanks to the god of victories,—let the immortal record of the long series of glorious achievements which succeeded these, tell, whether gratitude to their heroes was not there identified with homage to the spirit or the divinity that inspired them.

True it is, that whenever physical or moral principles are personified, the ignorant may be led to mistake the sign for that which is signified; but one of the most admirable characteristics of the Grecian religion is, that, with little effort, every external form may be traced to the spirit which it represents, and every fable may be resolved into a beautiful illustration of physical or moral truth. So that when mystic influences, with increasing knowledge, ceased to sway the imagination, all powerful truths directed the reason.

The natural and poetical religion of Greece, therefore, differed from false and vulgar religions in this, that it was calculated to hold equal empire over the minds of the ignorant and the wise; and the initiations of Eleusis were apparently the solemn acts by which the youths and maidens of Greece passed from ignorance and blind obedience to knowledge and enlightened zeal. Thus, in that happy region, neither were the priests knaves, nor the people their dupes.<sup>1</sup>

And what has been the result of this fundamental excellence?—That no interpolated fooleries have been

<sup>1</sup> I am not here called upon to vindicate the errors and absurdities which poets and others introduced into mythology.



able to destroy it; that the religion of Greece exists, and must ever exist, the religion of nature, genius, and taste; and that neither poetry nor the arts can have being without it. Schiller has well expressed this truth in the following lines :—

“The intelligible forms of ancient poets,  
The fair humanities of old religion,  
The power, the beauty, and the majesty,  
That had their haunts in dale, or piny mountains,  
Or forest, by slow stream, or pebbly spring,  
Or chasms, and watery depths,—all these have vanish'd ;  
They live no longer in the faith of reason ;  
But still the heart doth need a language ; still  
Doth the old instinct bring back the old names ;  
\*      \*      And even at this day,  
'Tis Jupiter who brings whate'er is great,  
And Venus who brings everything that's fair.”



## CHAPTER III.

### CAUTIONS AS TO YOUTH.

IN relation to *early* sexual association, it cannot be doubted, that when the instinct of reproduction begins to be developed, the reserve which parents, relatives, and instructors adopt on this subject is often the means of producing injurious effects ; because a system of concealment on this subject, as observed in the preceding chapter, is quite impracticable. Discoveries made by young persons in obscene books, the unguarded language or shameless conduct of grown-up persons, even the wild flights of an imagination which is then easily excited, will have the most fatal consequences.

Parents or instructors ought therefore, at that critical period, to give rational explanations as to the nature and the object of the propensity, the mechanism of reproduction in various vegetable and animal beings, and the fatal consequences to which this propensity may lead. Such procedure, if well conducted, cannot but have the most beneficial results ; because, in order that a sane person should avoid any danger, it is only necessary that he should see it distinctly.

The advantage, it has been observed, which the parent, relative, or instructor derives from himself



informing the adolescent in the new faculty which is developed in him, is to prevent his choosing, among corrupt servants or ignorant youths of his own age, the confidants of his amorous passion. The parent or instructor, moreover, is then justly entitled to, and has gratefully given to him, the entire confidence of the adolescent; and he is thereby enabled exactly to appreciate the degree of power of the propensity which he desires to divert or to guide.

Such being the case, it is the business of the parent to present a true picture of the effects of too early association of this kind, on the stature, the various development of the figure, the muscular power, the quality of the voice, the health, and especially on the acuteness, the power, the dignity, and the courage of the mind.

In doing this, it would be as stupid as injurious to employ the slightest degree of false representation, of reprimand, or even of what is called moralizing, which is only the contemptible cant of a being who cannot reason, when it takes the place of a simple and powerful statement of facts. All of these would only render the young man a dissembler, and would compel him to choose another confidant.

Among other considerations, varying according to the circumstances of the case, those stated below may with advantage be presented.

At a certain period in the life both of plants and animals, varying according to their kind and the climate they live in, they are fit for and disposed to the reproduction of their species. The sexes in both are then attracted to each other. In plants, the powder termed pollen, in animals a peculiar liquid which, deriving its name by analogy from the seeds



of plants, is termed seminal, is secreted by the male plant or animal, and, by organs differently formed in each kind, is cast upon ova or eggs, either contained within, or deposited by, the female. The details of this process are among the most beautiful and interesting of the living economy. In mankind, the transition to this period is termed puberty.

It is with this critical period, and his conduct during it, that all that the youth deems most valuable, all that can decide his fortunes and his happiness in the world, his stature, figure, strength, voice, health, and mental powers are most intimately connected.

In regard to stature, the body appears to complete its increase in height chiefly at the age of puberty, and during the first years which succeed that age. To be assured of the powerful influence of his own conduct, at this period, upon his stature, the youth has only to compare the tall men and women of the country, as in Yorkshire, Lancashire, Westmoreland, Cumberland, and the Scottish borders, where they have not been overworked, with the stunted and dwarfed creatures of the metropolis, where a stranger, when he first enters it, is apt to think he sees so many ugly boys and girls, whereas they are full-grown London men and women. Half the population of the metropolis is affected in this way; and it is the obvious consequence of puberty being generally accelerated by confinement, stimulating food, indecent plays, and sexual association.

In regard to the perfect development and beauty of the figure, the youth is probably aware that the most beautiful races of horses and dogs rapidly deteriorate, if men do not carefully maintain them by continence as well as by crossing. The too early employment,



the depraved abuses, the injury, or the removal of the sexual organs are all of them causes still more certain of deformity. The latter of these causes acts, of course, most obviously; and it is evidenced in the almost universal malformation of eunuchs, geldings, etc.

That, in regard to bodily strength, sexual continence adds energy to the muscular fibre, is clearly seen by observing the most ardent quadrupeds previous to the time of the union of their sexes. But, this being past, precisely in the same proportion does the effusion necessary to reproduction debilitate and break down the strongest animal. Many male animals even fall almost exhausted by a single act of union with the opposite sex.

Every classical student has read the beautiful allegory of Hercules, who, having spun at the knees of Omphale (*ομφαλὸς*, the navel, here put for the most essential part of the female generative organ), thereby lost his strength: this beautifully expressed the abasement of power amidst the indulgences of love. Euripides also depicts the terrible Achilles as timid before women, and respectful with Clytemnestra and Iphigenia. Hence, when a foolish lord reproached the poet Dryden with having given too much timidity toward women to a personage in one of his tragedies, and added that he knew better how to employ his time with the ladies, the poet answered, "You now acknowledge that you are no hero, which I intended that personage to be."

As to voice, which depends on the muscles of respiration, and more immediately on those of the mouth and throat, as general strength does on the muscles of the whole body, both merely affording



expressions of the mind, the influence of the sexual union upon it is prodigious. How entirely it is altered by the removal of the testes in eunuchs is known to every one: in corresponding proportion, is it altered by every act of the generative organs, but especially by sexual indulgence during puberty. The horrible voice of early libertines and prostitutes presents an alarming example of this. To those who value voice in conversation, in the delightful and humanizing exercise of music, or in the grander efforts of public speaking, nothing more need be said.

As to health, the less we are prodigal of life, the longer we preserve it. Every one capable of observing may see that the stag loses his horns and his hair after procreation; that birds fall into moulting and sadness; and that male insects even perish after this effort, as if they yielded their individual life to their progeny. Indeed, everything perishes so much the more readily, as it has thus transmitted life to its descendants, or has cast it away in vain pleasures.

In mankind, as in other animals, to procreate is in effect to die to oneself, and to leave one's life to posterity; especially if this takes place in early life. It is then that man becomes bald and bent; and that the charms of women fade. Even in advanced age, epicures are so well aware of this, that they are known to abstain from amorous excess, as the acknowledged cause of premature death.

In relation to mind,—as the generative power is the source of several characteristics of genius, the exhaustion of that power at an early age must take away these characteristics. Genius as surely languishes, and is extinguished, amidst early sexual



indulgence, as do the faculties of voice and locomotion, which are merely its signs and expressions.

It is thus with all our faculties, locomotive, vital, mental, at an early age. They are strengthened by all that they do not dissipate; and that which their organs too abundantly dispense is not only taken immediately from their own power, and mediately from that of the other organs, but it ensures the permanent debility of the whole.

It is true that the strong passions which are modified or characterized by the sexual impulse, excite the imagination and impel the mind to sublime exertions; but the sole means of either obtaining or preserving such impulsion is to shun the indulgence of pleasure in early life, and its waste at later periods.

It has accordingly been observed, that the passion of love appears to be most excessive in animals which least excel in mental faculties. Thus the beasts which are the most lascivious—the ass, the boar, etc., are also the most stupid; and idiots and cretins display a sensuality which brutifies them still more. Hence, the Homeric fable that Circe transformed men into beasts.

It would also appear that the most stupid animals—swine, rabbits, etc., in general produce the greatest number of young; while men of genius have engendered the fewest. It is remarked that none of the greatest men of antiquity were much given to sexual pleasure.

It is, then, of the greatest importance to young men who are ambitious of excellence, to mark well this truth, that the most powerful and distinguished in mental faculties, other things being equal, will be



he who wastes them least in early life by sexual indulgence—who most economizes the vital stimulant, in order to excite the mental powers on great occasions. By such means may a man surely surpass others, if he have received from his parents proportional mental energy.

Beside the means already indicated, there is one proposed by an able writer, as serving to divert the instinct of propagation when too early and excessive, and consequently dangerous: that is, the sentiment of love. To employ this means, he observes, “it is necessary to search early, after knowing the character of the adolescent whom it is wished to direct, for a young woman whose beauty and good qualities may inspire him with attachment. This means will serve, more than can easily be imagined, to preserve the adolescent both from the grosser attractions of libertinism and the diseases it entails, and from *the more dangerous snares of coquetry*. It is,” he adds, “a virtuous young woman and a solid attachment that are here spoken of.” At some future period I shall probably show how wise this recommendation is, as well as the necessity and the advantages of early marriages, under favourable circumstances.

Having now shown the evils of early sexual association, I may briefly notice those of later libertinism.

If, even in more advanced life, and when the constitution is stronger, the instinct of propagation be not restrained within just limits, it degenerates into inordinate lewdness or real mania: “*Reperrit obscænas veneres vitiosa libido.*” By such depravation, nobleness of character is utterly destroyed.

This scarcely evitable consequence of great fortune



and of the facility of indulgence, it has been justly observed, will ever be the ruin of the rich, and a mode of enervating the most vigorous branches of the most powerful houses.

The libertine, then, owing to exhaustion by sexual indulgence, is characterized by physical and moral impotence, or has a brain as incapable of thinking as his muscles are of acting.

As libertines are enfeebled by indulgence, it follows that they are proportionally distinguished by fear and cowardice. Nothing, indeed, destroys courage more than sexual abuses.

But from cowardice spring cunning, duplicity, lying, and perfidy. These common results of cowardice are uniformly found in eunuchs, slaves, courtiers, and sycophants, while boldness, frankness, and generosity belong to free and magnanimous men.

Again, cowardice, artifice, falsehood, and perfidy are the usual elements of cruelty. Men feel more wounded in self-love, as they are conscious of being more contemptible; and they avenge themselves with more malignity upon their enemy, as they find themselves more weak and worthless, and as they consequently dread him more.

These are the causes of that malignant revenge which princes have often shown, as, in ancient times—Tiberias, Caligula, Nero, Domitian, Heliogabalus, etc. In later times, Catherine de Medici solicited the massacre of the Protestants; Paul, Constantine, and Nicholas of Russia were happy only when they wallowed in blood; Charles the Tenth, equally effeminated and bigoted, perpetrated the massacre of the Parisians; Don Miguel covered Portugal with his assassinations; and nearly all the sovereigns and



sycophants in Europe upheld or palliated his atrocities.

The strong and brave man, on the contrary, scarce feels hurt, and scorns revenge.

It is not cruelty only with which we may reproach these effeminate individuals: it is every vice which springs from baseness of character.

Libertinism, moreover, is not hurtful only to the health and welfare of these individuals: it is so also to those of their posterity.

Finally, the results of libertinism have constantly marked not merely the ruin of families but the degeneration of races, and the decay of empires. The delights of Capua caused the ruin of Hannibal; and the Roman, once so proud before kings, finally transformed himself into the wretched slave of monsters degraded far below the rank of humanity.

So little, however, do men look to remote consequences, that perhaps the most frightful punishments of libertinism are the diseases which it inflicts. Man may, then, be said to meet only death on the path of life.

The dangers of promiscuous love are indeed far beyond what young men will easily believe. I do not exaggerate when I state, that, out of every three women, and those the least common of the promiscuous, two at least are certainly in a state of pollution capable of the most destructive infection. A surgeon in the habit of receiving foul patients at a public hospital tells me, I might safely say that nine out of every ten are in this state.

While writing this, Sir Anthony Carlisle observes to me, that, "The special disease which appears to be a punishment for sexual profligacy is not only



malignant, painful, and hideous in every stage of it, but the only remedy known for its cure, mercury, is a poison which generally leaves its own evils for the venom it destroys. This frightful disease has no natural termination but in a disgusting disgraceful death, after disfiguring the countenance, by causing blindness, loss of the nose, the palate, and teeth, and by the spoliation of the sinning organs. The miserables who thus perish in public hospitals are so offensive to the more respectable patients that they are confined to appointed rooms, termed foul wards, where they linger and die in the bloom of life, either of the penalty inflicted by their profligacy, of the poison administered to them, or of incurable consequent diseases, such as consumption, palsy, or madness."

Hence, it has been observed, that if we have to deal with a young man incapable of guidance by the nobler motives, of feeling contempt for vice, and horror for debauchery, there yet remains means to be employed. Let him be conducted to the hospital, where he will find collected the poor victims of debauchery—the unhappy women whom, even the day before, he may have seen in the streets, with faces dressed in smiles amidst the torments, the corrosion, and the contagion of disease. This may leave an impression sufficiently deep. But let him also know that these unhappy creatures are a thousand times more pitiable than the libertine, who destroys them, and who forfeits the only good we cannot refuse to other wretches, compassion for the misery he endures.



## CHAPTER IV.

### NATURE OF BEAUTY.

IN this chapter, my wish is to show that there are more than one kind of beauty, and that much confusion has arisen among writers, from not clearly distinguishing the characteristics of these kinds.

An essential condition, then, of all excitement and action in animal bodies, is a greater or less degree of novelty in the objects impressing them,—even if this novelty should arise only for a previous cessation of excitement.

Now, objects of greater or less novelty, are the causes of excitement, pleasurable or painful, by means of their various relations.

The lowest degree of bodily pleasure, (though, owing to its constancy, immense in its total amount,) is that which arises, during health, from those relations of bodies and that excitement which cause the mere local exercise of the organs—a source of pleasure which is seldom the object of our voluntary attention, but which seems to me to be the chief cause of attachment to life amidst its more definite and conspicuous evils.

All higher mental emotions consist of pleasure or pain superadded to more or less definite ideas. Plea-



surable emotions arise from the agreeable relations of things ; painful emotions, from the disagreeable ones.

The term by which we express the influence which objects, by means of their relations, possess of exciting emotions of pleasure in the mind, is BEAUTY.

Beauty, when founded on the relations of objects, or of the parts of objects, to each other, forms a first class, and may be termed *intrinsic beauty*.

When beauty is further considered in relation to ourselves, it forms a second class, and may be termed *extrinsic beauty*.

We are next led (hitherto this has apparently been done without analyzing or defining the operation) to a division of the latter into two genera—namely, the *minor beauty*, of which prettiness, delicacy, etc., are modifications, and that which is called *grandeur* or *sublimity*.

The characters of the minor beauty or prettiness, with relation to ourselves, are smallness, subordination, or subjection. Hence female beauty, in relation to the male.

The characters of grandeur or sublimity, with relation to ourselves, are greatness, super-ordination, or power. Hence male beauty, in relation to the female.

By the preceding brief train of analysis and definition, is, I believe, answered the question—"Whether the emotion of grandeur make a branch of the emotion of beauty, or be entirely distinct from it?"

Having, by this concise statement of my own views on these subjects, made the reader acquainted with some of the materials of future consideration here employed, I may now examine the opinions of some philosophers, in order to see how far they



accord with these first principles, and what answer can be given to them where they differ.

That *beauty generally considered* has nothing to do with particular size, is very well shown by Payne Knight, who, though he argues incorrectly about it in many other respects, here truly says, "All degrees of magnitude contribute to beauty in proportion as they show objects to be perfect in their kind. The dimensions of a beautiful horse are very different from those of a beautiful lapdog; and those of a beautiful oak from those of a beautiful myrtle; because nature has formed these different kinds of animals and vegetables upon different scales.

"The notion of objects being rendered beautiful by being gradually diminished, or tapered, is equally unfounded; for the same object, which is 'small by degrees, and beautifully less,' when seen in one direction, is large by degrees, and beautifully bigger, when seen in another. The stems of trees are tapered upwards; and the columns of Grecian architecture, having been taken from them, and therefore retaining a degree of analogy with them, were tapered upwards too; but the legs of animals are tapered downwards, and the inverted obelisks, upon which busts were placed, having a similar analogy to them, were tapered downwards also; whilst pilasters, which had no analogy with either, but were mere square posts terminating a wall, never tapered at all."

Speaking of beauty generally, and without seeing the distinctions I have made above, Burke, on the contrary, states the first quality of beauty to be comparative smallness, and says, "In ordinary conversation, it is usual to add the endearing name



of little to everything we love ; ” and, “ in most languages, the objects of love are spoken of under diminutive epithets.”

This is evidently true only of the objects of *minor* or *subordinate* beauty, which Burke confusedly thought the only kind of it, though he elsewhere grants, that beauty may be connected with sublimity ! It shows, however, that relative littleness is essential to that first kind of beauty.

With greater knowledge of facts than Burke possessed, and with as feeble reasoning powers, but with less taste, and with a perverse whimsicality which was all his own, Payne Knight similarly, making no distinction in beauty, considered smallness as an accidental association, failed to see that it characterized a kind of beauty, and argued that “ if we join the diminutive to a term, which precludes all such affection, or does not even, in some degree, express it, it immediately converts it into a term of contempt and reproach ; thus a bantling, a fondling, a darling, etc., are terms of endearment ; but a witling, a changeling, a lordling, etc., are invariably terms of scorn : so in French, ‘ mon petit enfant ’ is an expression of endearment ; but ‘ mon petit monsieur ’ is an expression of the most pointed reproach and contempt.”

Now, this chatter of grammatical termination and French phrase, though meant to look vastly clever, is merely a blunder. There is no analogy in the cases compared : a “ darling ” or little dear unites *dear*, an expression of love, with *little* implying that dependence which enhances love ; while “ witling ” or little wit unites *wit*, an expression of talent, with *little*, meaning the small quantity or absence of



the talent alluded to; and it is because the latter term means, not physical littleness, which well associates with love, but moral littleness, and mental degradation, that it becomes a term of contempt.

Even from the little already said, it seems evident that much of the confusion on this subject has arisen from not distinguishing the two genera of beauty, and not seeing that "the emotion of grandeur" is merely "a branch of the emotion of beauty."

The other genus of beauty, *grand* or *sublime beauty*, is well described by the names given to it, grandeur or sublimity. Some have considered sublimity as expressing grandeur in the highest degree; it would perhaps be as well to express the cause of the emotion by grandeur, and the emotion itself by sublimity.

Nothing is sublime that is not vast or powerful, or that does not make him who feels it sensible of its physical or moral superiority.

The simplest cause of sublimity is presented by all objects of vast magnitude or extent—a seemingly boundless plain, the sky, the ocean, etc.; and the particular direction of the magnitude or extent always correspondingly modifies the emotion,—height giving more especially the idea of power, breadth of resistance, depth of danger, etc. Of the objects mentioned above, the ocean is the most sublime, because, to vastness in length and breadth, it adds depth, and a force perpetually active.

Now, that these objects, though sublime, are beautiful, is very evident; and it is therefore also evident how much Burke erred in asserting comparative smallness to be the first character of beauty generally



considered. This and similar errors, as already said, have greatly obscured this subject, and have led Burke and others so to modify and qualify their doctrines, as to take from them all precision and certainty.

Hence, in one place, Burke says, "As, in the animal world, and in a good measure in the vegetable world likewise, the qualities that constitute *beauty* may *possibly* be united to things of *greater dimensions* [that is, littleness may be united with bigness!]; when they are so united they constitute *a species something different both from the sublime and beautiful*, which I have before called, Fine."

So also he says, "Ugliness I imagine likewise to be consistent enough with an idea of the sublime. But I would by no means insinuate that ugliness of itself is a sublime idea, unless united with such qualities as excite a strong terror."

Here, he confounds sublimity with terror, as do Blair and other writers, when they say that "exact proportion of parts, though it enters often into the beautiful, is much disregarded in the sublime." It is a fact, that exactly in proportion as ugliness is substituted for beauty in vast objects, is sublimity taken away, until at last it is utterly lost in the terrible.

Even Blair shows that sublimity may exist without terror or pain. "The proper sensation of sublimity appears," he observes, "to be distinguishable from the sensation of either of these, and, on several occasions, to be entirely separated from them. In many grand objects, there is no coincidence with terror at all; as in the magnificent prospect of wide extended plains, and of the starry firmament; or in



the moral dispositions and sentiments, which we view with high admiration; and in many painful and terrible objects also, it is clear, there is no sort of grandeur. The amputation of a limb, or the bite of a snake, are exceedingly terrible, but are destitute of all claim whatever to sublimity."

Payne Knight shows that terror is even opposed to sublimity. "All the great and terrible convulsions of nature; such as storms, tempests, hurricanes, earthquakes, volcanoes, etc., excite sublime ideas, and impress sublime sentiments by the prodigious exertions of energy and power which they seem to display: for though these objects are, in their nature, terrible, and generally known to be so, it is not this attribute of terror that contributes, in the smallest degree, to render them sublime. . . . Timid women fly to a cellar, or a darkened room, to avoid the sublime effects of a thunder storm; because to them they are not sublime, but terrible. To those only are they sublime '*qui formidine nulla imbuti spectant*,' who behold them without any fear at all and to whom, therefore, they are in no degree terrible."

This further confirms the distinction which I made of beauty into minor or subordinate, and grand or sublime beauty, although Knight adopted other principles, if principles they may be called, and neglected such distinction.

There is but one other error on this subject which I need to notice. Burke says, "To make anything very terrible, obscurity seems in general to be necessary. When we know the full extent of any danger, when we can accustom our eyes to it, a great deal of the apprehension vanishes. Every one will be sensible of this, who considers how greatly night



adds to our dread, in all cases of danger. . . . Those despotic governments, which are founded on the passions of men, and principally upon the passion of fear, keep their chief as much as may be from the public eye. The policy has been the same in many cases of religion. Almost all the heathen temples were dark."

From what has been already said, it is evident that all this contributes to terror, not to sublimity, and that the same error is made by Blair when he says, "As obscurity, so disorder too, is very compatible with grandeur, nay, frequently heightens it."

To expose the weakness and to destroy the authority of some writers on this subject, can only set the mind free for the investigation of truth. I may, therefore, conclude this chapter by quoting the shrewd remarks of Knight on some of the principles of Burke. I shall afterwards be forced critically to examine the notions of Knight in their turn.

Burke states that the highest degree of sublime sensation is astonishment; and the subordinate degrees, awe, reverence, and respect; all which he considers as modes of terror. And Knight observes that this graduated scale of the sublime, from respect to astonishment, cannot, perhaps, be better illustrated than by applying it to its character.

"He was certainly," says Knight, "a very respectable man, and revered by all who knew him intimately. At one period of his life, too, when he became the disinterested patron of remote and injured nations, who had none to help them, his character was truly sublime; but unless upon those whom he so ably and eloquently arraigned, I do not believe that it impressed any awe. . . . If, during this



period, he had suddenly appeared among the managers in Westminster Hall without his wig and coat, or had walked up St. James's-street without his breeches, it would have occasioned great and universal astonishment; and if he had, at the same time, carried a loaded blunderbuss in his hands, the astonishment would have been mixed with no small portion of terror: but I do not believe that the united effects of these two powerful passions would have produced any sentiment or sensation approaching to sublime, even in the breasts of those, who had the strongest sense of self-preservation and the quickest sensibility of danger."

Thus, I believe, it now appears that novelty is the exciting cause of pleasurable emotion and of the consequent perception of beauty in the relations of things, and that the two genera of beauty, the minor or subordinate beauty, and grandeur or sublimity, have distinct characteristics, the confounding of which by writers has led to the obscurity of this part of the subject.



## CHAPTER V.

### STANDARD OF TASTE IN BEAUTY.

THE expression, "standard of taste," is used to signify the basis or foundation of our judgments, respecting beauty and deformity and their consequent certainty.

Setting aside such objection as might be raised to a standard of taste on the doctrine of Berkeley (which I refuted in 1809, and which I need not enter into here), this matter was long ago settled by David Hume; and I have nothing new to say upon the subject (there is probably enough of novelty in other chapters, whatever its worth may be), except that Burke appears to have borrowed all he knew about it from that incomparably more profound philosopher.

As I ought not, however, to omit here a view of the subject, I cannot do better than transcribe the words of Hume and Burke respectively. While this will put the reader in possession of all that I think necessary upon the subject, it will further tend to show in what Burke's ability as a philosopher consisted.

I must first, however, observe that the word "taste," as expressing our judgment of beauty, is a metaphor whimsically borrowed from the lowest of our senses, and is applied to our exercise of that faculty, as



regards both natural objects, and the fine arts which imitate these.

It is not wonderful that the variety and inconstancy of tastes respecting the attributes and the characters of beauty should have led many philosophers to deny that there exist any certain combinations of forms and of effects to which the term beauty ought to be invariably attached.

In his Philosophical Dictionary, Voltaire, after quoting some nonsense from the crazy dreamer who did so much injury to Greek philosophy, says, "I am willing to believe that nothing can be more beautiful than this discourse of Plato; but it does not give us very clear ideas of the nature of the beautiful. Ask of a toad what is beauty, pure beauty, the *το καλον*; he will answer you that it is his female, with two large round eyes projecting from her little head, a large and flat throat, a yellow belly, and a brown back. Ask the devil, and he will tell you that the beautiful is a pair of horns, four claws, and a tail. Consult, lastly, the philosophers, and they will answer you by rigmale: they want something conformable to the archetype of the beautiful in essence, to the *το καλον*." This is wit, not reason: let us look for that to a deeper thinker,—as proposed above.

David Hume says, "It appears that, amidst all the variety and caprice of taste, there are certain general principles of approbation or blame, whose influence a careful eye may trace in all operations of the mind. Some particular forms or qualities, from the original structure of the internal fabric, are calculated to please, and others to displease. . . . If they fail of their effect in any particular instance, it is from some apparent *defect* or imperfection in the organ.



“In each creature there is a sound and a defective state; and the former alone can be supposed to afford us a true standard of taste and sentiment. If, in the sound state of the organ, there be an entire or a considerable uniformity of sentiment among men, we may thence derive an idea of the imperfect beauty; in like manner as the appearance of objects in day-light, to the eye of a man in health, is denominated their true and real colour.”

To the same purpose writes Burke, after some preliminary observations.

“All the natural powers in man, which I know, that are conversant about external objects, are the senses, the imagination, and the judgment.

“First, with regard to the senses. We do and we must suppose, that as the conformations of their organs are nearly, or altogether the same in all men, so the manner of perceiving external objects is in all men the same, or with little difference.

“As there will be little doubt that bodies present similar images to the whole species, it must necessarily be allowed that the pleasures and the pains which every object excites in one man, it must raise in all mankind, whilst it operates naturally, simply, and by its proper powers only.

“Custom, and some other causes, have made many deviations from the natural pleasures or pains which belong to these several tastes; but then the power of distinguishing between the natural and the acquired relish remains to the very last.

“There is in all men a sufficient remembrance of the original natural causes of pleasure, to enable them to bring all things offered to their senses to



that standard, and to regulate their feelings and opinions by it.

“Suppose one who had so vitiated his palate as to take more pleasure in the taste of opium than in that of butter or honey, to be presented with a bolus of squills; there is hardly any doubt but that he would prefer the butter or honey to this nauseous morsel, or to any other bitter drug to which he had not been accustomed; which proves that his palate was naturally like that of other men in all things, that it is still like the palate of other men in many things, and only vitiated in some particular points.”

In the same manner, Payne Knight observes that “things, naturally the most nauseous, become most grateful; and things, naturally most grateful, most insipid.

“This extreme effect, however, only takes place where the palate has become morbid and vitiated by continued, and even forced, gratification; and even then the metaphors, taken from this sense, and employed to express intellectual qualities, show that it is always felt and considered as a corruption, even by those who are most corrupted: for though there are many who prefer port wine to malmsey, and tobacco to sugar, yet no one ever spoke of a sour or bitter temper as pleasant, or of a sweet one as unpleasant.” By this concession, Knight answers several of his own objections.

“When it is said,” further observes Burke, very properly, “taste cannot be disputed, it can only mean that no one can strictly answer what pleasure or pain some particular man may find from the taste of some particular thing. This indeed cannot be disputed; but we may dispute, and with sufficient



clearness too, concerning the things which are naturally pleasing or disagreeable to the sense. But when we talk of any peculiar or acquired relish, then we must know the habits, the prejudices, or the distempers of this particular man, and we must draw our conclusions from those."

Hume proceeds to a second point, observing that "one obvious cause, why many feel not the proper sentiment of beauty, is the want of that *delicacy* of imagination which is requisite to convey a sensibility of those finer emotions.

"Where the organs are so fine as to allow nothing to escape them, and at the same time so exact as to perceive every ingredient in the composition; this we call delicacy of taste, whether we employ these terms in the literal or metaphorical sense."

Burke enlarges on this, after preliminarily observing that "the power of the imagination is incapable of producing anything absolutely new; it can only vary the disposition of those ideas which it has received from the senses. Now, the imagination is the most extensive province of pleasure and pain, as it is the region of our fears and our hopes, and of all our passions that are connected with them.

"Since the imagination is only the representation of these senses, it can only be pleased or displeased with the images, from the same principle on which the sense is pleased or displeased with the realities; and consequently there must be just as close an agreement in the imaginations as in the senses of men.

"There are some men formed with feelings so blunt, with tempers so cold and phlegmatic, that they can hardly be said to be awake during the whole course of their lives. Upon such persons,



the most striking objects make but a faint and obscure impression. There are others so continually in the agitation of gross and merely sensual pleasures, or so occupied in the low drudgery of avarice, or so heated in the chase of honours and distinction, that their minds, which had been used continually to the storms of these violent and tempestuous passions, can hardly be put in motion by the delicate and refined play of the imagination. These men, though from a different cause, become as stupid and insensible as the former; but whenever either of these happen to be struck with any natural elegance or greatness, or with these qualities in any work of art, they are moved upon the same principle."

On a third point, Hume says, "But though there be naturally a wide difference in point of delicacy between one person and another, nothing tends further to increase and improve this talent than *practice* in a particular art, and the frequent survey or contemplation of a particular species of beauty.

"So advantageous is practice to the discernment of beauty, that, before we can give judgment on any work of importance, it will even be requisite that that very individual performance be more than once perused by us, and be surveyed in different lights with attention and deliberation."

This is well illustrated by Burke, who observes, "It is known that the taste (whatever it is) is improved exactly as we improve our knowledge, by a steady attention to our object, and by frequent exercise.

"To illustrate this (that there is a difference, not in the causes, nor in the manner of men's being affected, but in the degree, owing to natural sensibi-



lity, or greater attention to the object)—to illustrate this by the procedure of the senses in which the same difference is found, let us suppose a very smooth marble table to be set before two men; they both perceive it to be smooth, and they are both pleased with it because of this quality. So far they agree.

“But suppose another, and after that another table, the latter still smoother than the former, to be set before them. It is now very probable that these men, who are so agreed upon what is smooth, and in the pleasure from thence, will disagree when they come to settle which table has the advantage in point of polish. . . . Nor is it easy, when such a difference arises, to settle the point, if the excess or diminution be not glaring.

“In these nice cases, supposing the acuteness of the sense equal, the greater attention and habit in such things will have the advantage. In the question about the tables, the marble polisher will unquestionably determine the most accurately.

“In the imagination, besides the pain or pleasure arising from the properties of the natural object, a pleasure is perceived from the resemblance which the imitation has to the original.

“All men are nearly equal in this point, as far as their knowledge of the things represented or compared extends.

“The principle of this knowledge is very much accidental, as it depends upon experience and observation, and not on the strength or weakness of any natural faculty; and it is from this difference in knowledge that what we commonly, though with no great exactness, call a difference in taste, proceeds.



“A man to whom sculpture is new sees a barber’s block, or some ordinary piece of statuary; he is immediately struck and pleased, because he sees something like an human figure; and entirely taken up with this likeness, he does not at all attend to its defects. No person, I believe, at the first time of seeing a piece of imitation, ever did. Some time after, we suppose that this novice lights upon a more artificial work of the same nature; he begins to look with contempt on what he admired at first; not that he admired it even then for its unlikeness to a man, but for that general though inaccurate resemblance which it bore to the human figure. What he admired at different times in these so different figures, is strictly the same; and though his knowledge is improved, his taste is not altered. Hitherto his mistake was from a want of knowledge in art, and this arose from his inexperience; but he may be still deficient, from a want of knowledge in nature. For it is possible that the man in question may stop here, and that the master-piece of a great hand may please him no more than the middling performance of a vulgar artist; and this not for want of better or higher relish, but because all men do not observe with sufficient accuracy on the human figure, to enable them to judge properly of an imitation of it.”

On other points, Hume makes the following observations.

“Without being frequently obliged to form *comparisons* between the several species and degrees of excellence, and estimating their proportion to each other . . . a man is indeed totally unqualified to pronounce an opinion with regard to any object presented to him. By comparison alone, we fix the



epithets of praise or blame, and learn how to assign the due degree of each.

“ But to enable a critic more fully to execute this undertaking, he must preserve his mind free from all *prejudice*, and allow nothing to enter into his consideration, but the very object which is submitted to his examination.

“ It is well known, that in all questions submitted to the understanding, prejudice is destructive of sound judgment, and perverts all operations of the intellectual faculties ; it is no less contrary to good taste ; nor has it less influence to corrupt our sentiments of beauty. It belongs to *good sense* to check its influence in both cases ; and in this respect, as well as in many others, reason, if not an essential part of taste, is at least requisite to the operations of this latter faculty. In all the nobler productions of genius, there is a mutual relation and correspondence of parts ; nor can either the beauties or blemishes be perceived by him whose thought is not capacious enough to comprehend all those parts, and compare them with each other, in order to perceive the consistence and uniformity of the whole. Every work of art has also a certain end or purpose for which it is calculated ; and is to be deemed more or less perfect, as it is more or less fitted to attain this end.”

To a repetition of this, Burke adds some useful remarks.

“ As many of the works of imagination are not confined to representation of sensible objects, nor to efforts upon the passions, but extend themselves to the manners, the characters, the actions, and designs of men, their relations, their virtues and vices, they



come within the province of the judgment, which is improved by attention and by the habit of reasoning.

“The cause of a wrong taste is a defect of judgment, and this may arise from a natural weakness of understanding (in whatever the strength of that faculty may consist), or which is much more commonly the case, it may arise from a want of proper and well-directed exercise, which alone can make it strong and ready. Besides that ignorance, inattention, prejudice, rashness, levity, obstinacy, in short, all those passions, and all those vices which pervert the judgment in other matters, prejudice it no less in this its more refined and elegant province. These causes produce different opinions upon everything which is an object of the understanding, without inducing us to suppose, that there are no settled principles of reason.

“A rectitude of judgment in the arts, which may be called a good taste, does in a great measure depend upon sensibility; because if the mind has no bent to the pleasures of imagination, it will never apply itself sufficiently to works of that species to acquire a competent knowledge in them. But though a degree of sensibility is requisite to form a good judgment, yet a good judgment does not necessarily arise from a quick sensibility of pleasure; it frequently happens that a very poor judge, merely by force of a greater complexional sensibility, is more affected by a poor piece, than the best judge by the most perfect; for as everything new, extraordinary, grand, or passionate, is well calculated to affect such a person, and that the faults do not affect him, his pleasure is more pure and unmixed.



“ In the morning of our days, when the senses are unworn and tender, when the whole man is awake in every part, and the gloss of novelty fresh upon all the objects that surround us, how lively at that time are our sensations, but how false and inaccurate the judgments we form of things.

“ Every trivial cause of pleasure is apt to affect the man of too sanguine a complexion: his appetite is too keen to suffer his taste to be delicate. . . . One of this character can never be a refined judge; never what the comic poet calls ‘*elegans formarum spectator*.’

“ The rude hearer is affected by the principles which operate in these arts even in their rudest condition; and he is not skilful enough to perceive the defects. But as arts advance towards their perfection, the science of criticism advances with equal pace, and the pleasure of judges is frequently interrupted by the faults which are discovered in the most finished compositions.”

The chief idea above expressed, is again repeated by Sir J. Reynolds, who says, “ The principles of these (the imagination and the passions) are as invariable as the former (the senses), and are to be known and reasoned upon in the same manner, by an appeal to *common sense* deciding upon the common feelings of mankind.”

These views are thus summed by Hume: “ The organs of internal sensation are seldom so perfect as to allow the general principles their full play, and produce a feeling correspondent to those principles. They either labour under some defect, or are vitiated by some disorder; and by that means, excite a sentiment which may be pronounced erroneous. When the



critic has no delicacy, he judges without any distinction, and is only affected by the grosser and more palpable qualities of the object: the finer touches pass unnoticed and disregarded. Where he is not aided by practice, his verdict is attended with confusion and hesitation. Where no comparison has been employed, the most frivolous beauties, such as rather merit the name of defects, are the object of his admiration. Where he lies under the influence of prejudice, all his natural sentiments are perverted. Where good sense is wanting, he is not qualified to discern the beauties of design and reasoning, which are the highest and most excellent. Under some or other of these imperfections, the generality of men labour; and hence a true judge in the finer arts is observed, even during the most polished ages, to be so rare a character: strong sense, united to delicate sentiment, improved by practice, perfected by comparison, and cleared of all prejudice, can alone entitle critics to this valuable character; and the joint verdict of such, wherever they are to be found, is the true standard of taste and beauty."

Taking the principal ideas above, Burke also concludes, "On the whole it appears to me, that what is called taste, in its most general acceptation, is not a simple idea, but is partly made up of a perception of the primary pleasures of sense, of the secondary pleasures of the imagination, and of the conclusions of the reasoning faculty, concerning the various relations of these, and concerning the human passions, manners, and actions."

"It is sufficient for our present purpose," Hume further observes, "if we have proved, that the taste of all individuals is not upon an equal footing, and



that some men in general, however difficult to be particularly pitched upon, will be acknowledged by universal sentiment to have a preference above others.

“ Though men of delicate taste be rare, they are easily to be distinguished in society by the soundness of their understanding, and the superiority of their faculties above the rest of mankind. The ascendant, which they require, gives a prevalence to that lively approbation with which they receive any productions of genius, and renders it generally predominant. Many men, when left to themselves, have but a faint and dubious perception of beauty, who yet are capable of relishing any fine stroke which is pointed out to them. Every convert to the admiration of the real poet or orator is the cause of some new conversion. And though prejudices may prevail for a time, they never unite in celebrating any rival to the true genius, but yield at last to the force of nature and just sentiment.”

Hume finally obviates some apparent difficulties.

“ But notwithstanding all our endeavours to fix a standard of taste, and reconcile the discordant apprehensions of men, there still remain two sources of variation, which are not sufficient indeed to confound all the boundaries of beauty and deformity, but will often serve to produce a difference in the degrees of our approbation or blame. The one is the different humours of particular men ; the other, the particular manners and opinions of our age and country.

“ A young man, whose passions are warm, will be more sensibly touched with amorous and tender images, than a man more advanced in years, who takes pleasure in wise, philosophical reflections, con-



cerning the conduct of life and moderation of the passions. At twenty, Ovid may be the favourite author; Horace, at forty; and perhaps Tacitus, at fifty. Vainly would we, in such cases, endeavour to enter into the sentiments of others, and divest ourselves of those propensities which are natural to us. We choose our favourite author as we do our friend, from a conformity of humour and disposition.

“Such preferences are innocent and unavoidable, and can never reasonably be the object of dispute, because there is no standard by which they can be decided.

“For a like reason, we are more pleased, in the course of our reading, with pictures and characters that resemble objects which are found in our own age or country, than with those which describe a different set of customs.

“A man of learning and reflection can make allowance for these peculiarities of manners; but a common audience can never divest themselves so far of their usual ideas and sentiments, as to relish pictures which nowise resemble them.”

Thus I believe the reader has before him a view, sufficiently clear, of that popular topic, the standard of taste, as well as of the agreement which subsists among the best writers on the subject. In the next chapter, we proceed to a more fundamental and difficult inquiry.



## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY.<sup>1</sup>

ON the subject of the preceding chapter, even the reasonings of Hume appear to me to be of too vague and indefinite a kind. It requires the more minute scrutiny into which I shall now enter, in order to place it upon a deeper and more scientific foundation. If I can here show that, in the material qualities of the objects of nature and art, there exist elements of beauty equally invariable in themselves, and in the kind of effect they produce upon the mind, it is evident there can be no further dispute about a standard of beauty.

Many attempts have been made to determine the material elements of beauty, by Hogarth, Home, and others. All have more or less failed, from not observing that these elements are modified, varied, and complicated, as we advance from the most simple to the most complex class of natural beings, or of the arts which relate to these respectively. Many partial views of perfect truth and great interest have been taken, and by every one of these it will be my

<sup>1</sup> To the reader unaccustomed to inquiries of this kind, it may save trouble to peruse first the brief Summary of the contents at the end of this chapter.



duty here to profit; but, from the failure just pointed out, no philosophical and systematic doctrine of beauty, ascending from its origin in elements through its higher combinations, has ever been attained by any of the numerous, deep, acute, and elegant thinkers who have devoted their time to this subject, as the foundation of taste and of the fine or intellectual arts.

Profiting, as I ought to do, by the partial views of these philosophers, I pretend here only to take one larger view,—to analyze, to generalize, to systematize the materials which they present to me.

In the hope of accomplishing this, I shall now endeavour successively to trace the elements of beauty which belong respectively to inanimate, living, and thinking beings, and to the useful, ornamental, and intellectual arts which have a reference to these, the neglect of all which I have described as the fundamental cause of previous failure.

Again I repeat, it is to this analysis and generalization alone, and to the systematization founded upon it, that I make any pretence. The materials have long been presented by all the great writers on the subject; they have only left them in confusion, and without conclusion. I shall now proceed to employ them.

## SECTION I.

### ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY IN INANIMATE BEINGS.

Though Burke did not accurately trace the elements of beauty in any one class of the objects of nature or art, he yet states a preliminary truth on



this subject so well that I here quote it: "It would be absurd," he observes, "to say that all things affect us by association only; since some things must have been originally and naturally agreeable or disagreeable, from which the others derive their associated powers; and it would be, I fancy, to little purpose to look for the cause of our passions in association, until we fail of it in the natural properties of things."

Home, advancing further, says: "If a tree be beautiful by means of its colour, its figure, its size, its motion, it is in reality possessed of so many different beauties, which ought to be examined separately, in order to have a clear notion of the whole.

"When any body is viewed as a whole, the beauty of its figure arises from regularity<sup>1</sup> and simplicity; and viewing the parts with relation to each other, from uniformity,<sup>1</sup> proportion, and order."

I will here only observe that these are the qualities, as will speedily appear, which Burke should have set down as the fundamental and first characteristics of beauty, instead of relative littleness, which belongs, not to beauty generally, but only to the minor or subordinate beauty.

Even Home, having arrived thus far, says, "To inquire why an object, by means of the particulars mentioned, appears beautiful, would, I am afraid, be a vain attempt."

But he truly adds, "One thing is clear, that regularity, uniformity, order, and simplicity, con-

<sup>1</sup> Regularity expresses the similarity of parts considered as constituting a whole; and uniformity, the similarity of parts considered separately.



tribute each of them to readiness of apprehension, and enable us to form more distinct images of objects than can be done with the utmost attention where these particulars are not founded." And he subjoins, "This final cause is, I acknowledge, too slight to account satisfactorily for a taste that makes a figure so illustrious in the nature of man; and that this branch of our constitution hath a purpose still more important, we have great reason to believe.

Now, had Home seen that the characteristics of general beauty always are, with regard to the object, accordant and agreeable relations, the importance of the qualities he has just enumerated would have been evident; for, without them, these characteristics of the objects could not exist: simplicity, regularity, uniformity, order, etc., are the very elements of accordant and agreeable relations. This is, in reality, the still more important purpose in which Home believed, and to which the readiness of apprehension he now alludes to eminently contributes.

As to simplicity, he observes that "a multitude of objects crowding into the mind at once, disturb the attention, and pass without making any impression, or any lasting impression; and in any group, no single object makes the figure it would do apart, when it occupies the whole attention. For the same reason, even a single object, when it divides the attention by the multiplicity of its parts, equals not, in strength of impression, a more simple object comprehended in a single view: parts extremely complex must be considered in portions successively; and a number of impressions in succession, which cannot unite because not simultaneous, never touch the



mind like one entire impression made, as it were, at one stroke.

“A square is less beautiful than a circle, because it is less simple: a circle has parts as well as a square; but its parts not being distinct like those of a square, it makes one entire impression; whereas the attention is divided among the sides and angles of a square. . . . A square, though not more regular than a hexagon or octagon, is more beautiful than either, because a square is more simple, and the attention less divided.

“Simplicity thus contributes to beauty.”

By regularity is meant that circumstance in a figure by which we perceive it to be formed according to a certain rule. Thus a circle, a square, a parallelogram, or triangle, please by their regularity.

“A square,” says Home, (who here furnishes the best materials to a more general view, because he most frequently assigns physical causes, and whom, with some abbreviations, I therefore continue to quote)—“a square is more beautiful than a parallelogram, because the former exceeds the latter in regularity and in uniformity of parts. This is true with respect to intrinsic beauty only; for, in many instances, utility comes in to cast the balance on the side of the parallelogram: this figure for the doors and windows of a dwelling-house, is preferred because of utility; and here we find the beauty of utility prevailing over that of regularity and uniformity.”

Thus regularity and uniformity contribute to intrinsic beauty.

“A parallelogram, again, depends for its beauty on the proportion [or relation of quantity] of its sides. Its beauty is lost by a great inequality of



these sides: it is also lost by their approximating towards equality; for proportion there degenerates into imperfect uniformity, and the figure appears an unsuccessful attempt towards a square."

Thus proportion contributes to beauty.

"An equilateral triangle yields not to a square in regularity nor in uniformity of parts, and it is more simple. Its inferiority in beauty is at least partly owing to inferiority of order in the position of its parts: the sides of an equilateral triangle incline to each other in the same angle, which is the most perfect order they are susceptible of; but this order is obscure, and far from being so perfect as the parallelism of the sides of a square."

Thus order contributes to the beauty of visible objects.

"A mountain, it may be objected, is an agreeable object, without so much as the appearance of regularity; and a chain of mountains is still more agreeable, without being arranged in any order. But though regularity, uniformity, and order are causes of beauty, there are also other causes of it, as colour; and when we pass from small to great objects, and consider grandeur instead of beauty, very little regularity is required."

It follows, from all that has been here said, and this has been shown by Burke, that any rugged, any sudden projection, any sharp angle, is in the highest degree contrary to the idea of beauty. Such projections and angles are destitute of all the qualities which have just been enumerated—simplicity, regularity, uniformity, proportion, order; and, conformably to the principles I have laid down in a previous chapter, they can present only relations which are



naturally disagreeable. This view is corroborated by the fact, that all very sharp, broken, or angular objects, were disagreeable to the boy couched by Cheselden, as they are to all eyes of very nice sensibility.

Now, as angular forms give, to the sense of touch, sharpness, roughness, or harshness, so do opposite forms give smoothness or fineness. Hence Burke makes smoothness his second characteristic of beauty, and that far more truly than he makes littleness its first, for, as he observes, smoothness is a quality so essential to beauty, that I do not now recollect anything beautiful that is not smooth.

Such being really the case, I am bound to expose Knight's sophistry on this point. "This elegant author," says he, "has expatiated upon the gratifications of feeling smooth and undulating surfaces in general: but, I believe, these gratifications have been confined to himself; and probably to his own imagination acting through the medium of his favourite system: for, except in the communication of the sexes, which affords no general illustration, and ought therefore to be kept entirely out of the question, I have never heard of any person being addicted to such luxuries; though a feeling-board would certainly afford as cheap and innocent a gratification, as either a smelling-bottle, a picture, or a flute, provided it were capable of affording any gratification at all."

This is a good specimen of the kind of perverted reasoning, which peculiarly distinguishes Knight.

A man affecting the character of philosopher, ought calmly to have observed that, by young people before puberty, and, consequently, when there is not the



slightest sexual bias, smooth objects are generally found to be agreeable, and round or harsh ones to be the reverse. This would at once have set him right upon this point.

If, to such a man, it should for a moment have appeared worth while to ask why we do not make use of feeling-boards, as well as of smelling-bottles, he ought to have sought the solution of his difficulty in the nature of the senses; and then with a trifle more of ability than Payne Knight hereby shows himself to have possessed, he would have seen that smoothness affords us as much pleasure as any smell, but that, as it would have been always troublesome, and often impossible, to apply our fingers to smooth surfaces, we generally receive the varied and incessant pleasure it affords, by means of sight; that it is borne by light to the eye, as smell is by the air; and that this is the reason why, except when contact is indispensable, we have no need of anything in the way of a feeling-board.

But Knight says, "Smoothness being properly a quality, perceivable only by the touch, and applied metaphorically to the objects of the other senses, we often apply it, very improperly, to those of vision; assigning smoothness, as a cause of visible beauty, to things which, though smooth to the touch, cast the most sharp, harsh, and angular reflections of light upon the eyes; and these reflections are all that the eye feels, or naturally perceives. . . . Such are all objects of cut glass, or polished metal; as may be seen by the manner in which painters imitate them: for as the imitations of painting extend only to the visible qualities of bodies, they show those visible qualities fairly and impartially. . . . Yet



the imitative representation of such objects in painting is far less harsh and dazzling than the effects of them in reality: for there are no materials, that a painter can employ, capable of expressing the sharpness and brilliancy of those angular reflections of the collected and condensed rays, which are emitted from the surfaces of polished metals."

It seems, to me, scarcely possible to find sophistry more worthless than this, or rather a more contemptible quibble; for that which, availing himself of our technicalities about light, he calls angularity, sharpness, etc., has no analogy with disagreeable angularity of form. To produce the brilliance and splendour which he calls angular, and describes as so *offensive*, we polish crystalline and metallic bodies in the highest degree!—we value precisely those which thus admit of greatest splendour!—and, on that very account, the diamond (rightly or wrongly, is not the question) is deemed the most valuable object on earth!

So much for those elements of beauty, in inanimate things, which fall under the cognizance of our fundamental sense, or that of touch.

As to sight and its objects, it is true that, as this organ varies in different persons, their taste is modified with regard to colours. But the preference of light and delicate colours to dark and glaring ones, is almost universal among persons of sensibility.

Alison, indeed, ascribes the effects of all colours to association. "White," he says, "as it is the colour of day, is expressive to us of the cheerfulness or gaiety which the return of day brings: black, as the colour of darkness [night], is expressive of gloom and melancholy." And he adds, "Whether



some colours may not of themselves produce agreeable sensations, and others disagreeable sensations, I am not anxious to dispute." But this is the very point into which Alison ought to have inquired. Nature does nothing without foundation in the simplest principles; and this foundation is not only anterior to, but is the cause of all association.

That, independent of any association, blackness is naturally disagreeable, if not painful, is happily determined by the case of the boy restored to sight by Cheselden, who tells us that the first time the boy saw a black object, it gave him great uneasiness; and that, some time after, upon accidentally seeing a negro woman, he was struck with great horror at the sight. This appears to be perfectly conclusive.

Knight, indeed, says, "As to the uneasiness, which the boy, couched by Cheselden, felt at the first sight of a black object, it arose either from the harshness of its outline, or from its appearing to act as a partial extinguisher applied to his eyes, which, as every object that he saw, seemed to touch them, would, of course, be its effect." It is highly probable that black operates in both these ways; and it has therefore natural effects, independent of all association.

As to sounds, Alison observes, that the cries of some animals are sublime, as the roar of the lion, the scream of the eagle, etc., and he thinks they become so, because we associate them with the strength and ferocity of the animals which utter them. By opposite associations, he accounts for the beauty of the notes of birds. And he says, that there is a similar sublimity or beauty, in the tones of the human voice, and that "such sounds are associated, in our imagina-



tions; with the qualities of mind of which they are in general expressive, and naturally produce in us the conception of these qualities."

This writer endeavours to establish his views on this subject, by observing that "Grandeur, or sublimity of sound, can no otherwise arise from its loudness, than as that loudness excites an idea of power in the sonorous object, or in some other associated with it in the mind: for a child's drum, close to the ear, fills it with more real noise, than the discharge of a cannon a mile off; and the rattling of a carriage in the street, when faintly and indistinctly heard, has often been mistaken for thunder at a distance. Yet no one ever imagined the beating of a child's drum or the rattling of a carriage over the stones, to be grand or sublime; which, nevertheless, they must be, if grandeur or sublimity belong at all to the sensation of loudness. But artillery and lightning are powerful engines of destruction: and with their power we sympathize, whenever the sound of them excites any sentiments of sublimity."

Now, all this is directly opposed to the doctrine it is meant to support. It distinctly implies that loudness is so natural and so frequent a result of the violent contact of bodies, that we sometimes mistakenly ascribe power to objects, of which we have not correctly distinguished the sounds, owing to imitation, distance, etc. The occasional mistake implies the general truth.

Alison, himself, notwithstanding his doctrine of association, is accordingly led to observe, that "there are some philosophers who consider these as the natural signs of passion or affection, and who believe that it is not from experience, but by means of an



original faculty, that we interpret them: and this opinion is supported by great authorities."

He adds the following observations, which, notwithstanding the error they involve, are too much to the purpose to be omitted here, and which in reality illustrate a natural and true theory, better than they do his own.

"It is natural, however, to suppose, that in this, as in every case, our experience should gradually lead to the formation of some general rules, with regard to this expression.

"The great divisions of sound are into loud and low, grave and acute, long and short, increasing and diminishing. The two first divisions are expressive in themselves: the two last only in conjunction with others.

"Loud sound is connected with ideas of power and danger. Many objects in nature which have such qualities, are distinguished by such sounds; and this association is further confirmed from the human voice, in which all violent and impetuous passions are expressed in loud tones.

"Low sound has a contrary expression, and is connected with ideas of weakness, gentleness, and delicacy. This association takes its rise not only from the observation of inanimate nature, or of animals, where, in a great number of cases, such sounds distinguish objects with such qualities, but particularly from the human voice, where all gentle, or delicate, or sorrowful affections, are expressed by such tones.

"Grave sound is connected with ideas of moderation, dignity, solemnity, etc., principally, I believe, from all moderate, or restrained, or chastened affec-



tions, being distinguished by such tones in the human voice.

“Acute sound is expressive of pain, or fear, or surprise, etc., and generally operates by producing some degree of astonishment. This association, also, seems principally to arise from our experience of such connexions in the human voice.

“Long or lengthened sound seems to me to have no expression in itself, but only to signify the continuance of that quality which is signified by other qualities of sound. A loud or a low, a grave or an acute sound prolonged, expresses to us no more than the continuance of the quality which is generally signified by such sounds.

“Short or abrupt sound has a contrary expression, and signifies the sudden cessation of the quality thus expressed.

“Increasing sound signifies, in the same manner, the increase of the quality expressed.

“Decreasing sound signifies the gradual diminution of such qualities.

“Motion furnishes another sort of beauty.

“Figure, colour, and motion readily blend in one object, and one general perception of beauty. In many beautiful objects they all unite, and render the beauty greater.”

These characteristics are too universal not to support the doctrine of natural appropriation and power, of which association is merely a consequence.

It may be said, that all this chiefly regards mere geometrical forms, not objects in nature. But, on referring to inanimate objects, it will be found that they everywhere present these forms.

The round, the simplest form, appears to charac-



terize all elementary bodies, and all that are free from compression, to be in fact the most elementary and the most readily assumed in nature. This form, accordingly, is presented by the drops of water and of every liquid, by every atom probably of oxygen, hydrogen, and azote, and by the largest as well as the smallest bodies, the innumerable celestial orbs.

All the other, the angular forms, are presented by inanimate bodies under compression, or by mineral crystals.

Thus, then, do these simple geometrical forms characterize the simplest bodies in nature; and it appears that this first kind of beauty is peculiarly their own. It will, in the sequel, be as clearly seen, that each of the other classes of natural beings presents beauty of a different kind, which similarly characterizes it. Hence no rational theory of beauty could be formed by writers, who indiscriminatingly jumbled together the characteristics of all the kinds of beauty, and expected to find them everywhere.

As, then, from all that has been said, it appears that all the elements of beauty which have thus been noticed, belonged to inanimate beings, and as this is shown by the passages I have quoted from the best writers, it seems surprising not merely that they should not have seen this to be the case, but, that it should not have led them to observe, that there exists also a second beauty, of living beings, and third, of thinking beings, as well as others of the useful, the ornamental, and the intellectual arts respectively, in each of which some new element was only added to the characters of the preceding species.

It seems still more surprising that Alison, who



deviates so widely from all fundamental principles, should have actually stumbled upon an observation of a few of the characteristics of inanimate beings, and trace them as they pass upward through some living and thinking beings—whose new characteristics, however, he did not discriminate. He observes, that “the greater part of those bodies in nature, which possess hardness, strength, or durability, are distinguished by angular forms. The greater part of those bodies, on the contrary, which possess weakness, fragility, or delicacy, are distinguished by winding or curvilinear forms. In the mineral kingdom, all rocks, stones, and metals, the hardest and most durable bodies we know, assume universally angular forms. In the vegetable kingdom, all strong and durable plants are in general distinguished by similar forms. The feebler and more delicate race of vegetables, on the contrary, are mostly distinguished by winding forms. In the animal kingdom, in the same manner, strong and powerful animals are generally characterized by angular forms; feeble and delicate animals, by forms of the contrary kind.”

## SECTION II.

### ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY IN LIVING BEINGS.

I have now to show that, in living beings, while the characters of the first and fundamental beauty, that of inanimate beings, are still partially continued, new characteristics are added to them.

Plants, accordingly, possess both rigid parts, like some of those described in the preceding section, and delicate parts, which, in ascending through the



classes of natural beings from the simplest to the most complex, are the very first to present to us new and additional characters totally distinct from those of the preceding class.

I. To begin as nature does, then, we find the trunks and stems of plants, which are near the ground, resembling most in character the inanimate bodies from among which they spring. They assume the simplest and most universal form in nature, the round one; but as growth is their great function, they extend in height and become cylindrical.

Even the branches, the twigs, and the tendrils, continue this elementary character; but it is in them, or in the stem when, like them, it is tender, that such elementary characters give way to the purposes of life—namely, growth and reproduction, and that we discover the new and additional characters of beauty which this class presents to us.

II. To render this matter plain, I must observe that the formation of rings, which unite in tubes, appears to be almost universally the material condition of growth and reproduction. Every new portion of these tubes, moreover, and every superadded ring, is less than that which preceded it.

It is from this that results the first characteristic of this second kind of beauty—namely, fineness or delicacy. Hence Burke made the possession of a delicate frame, without any remarkable appearance of strength, his fifth condition in beauty; and he here erred only from that want of discrimination which led him to confound together all the conditions of beauty, and prevented his seeing that they belonged to different genera.

Now, as fine and delicate bodies, which are grow-



ing, will shoot in that direction where space, air, and light can best be had, and as this, amidst other twigs and tendrils, will greatly vary, so will their productions rarely continue long in the same straight line, but will, on the contrary, bend. Hence the curved or bending form is the second characteristic of this kind of beauty.

It is worthy of remark, that as the trunks, stems, twigs, and tendrils of plants assume the simplest and most universal form in nature, the round one, so their more delicate parts have again the tendency to bend into a similar form.

In the young and feeble branches of plants, it is observed by Alison, that the bending form is "beautiful, when we perceive that it is the consequence of the delicacy of their texture, and of their being overpowered by the weight of the flower. . . . In the smaller and feebler tribe of flowers, as in the violet, the daisy, or the lily of the valley, the bending of the stem constitutes a very beautiful form, because we immediately perceive that it is the consequence of the weakness and delicacy of the flower."

From the circumstances now described, it results that all the parts of plants present the most surprising variety. They vary their direction every moment, as Burke observes, and they change under the eye by a deviation continually carrying on, but for whose beginning or end you will find it difficult to ascertain a point.

Variety is therefore the third characteristic of this second kind of beauty; and in the indiscriminating views of Burke, he made two similar conditions—viz., "Thirdly, to have a variety in the direction



of the parts ; but, fourthly, to have those parts not angular, but melted, as it were, into each other ;” thus applying these to beauty generally, to which they are not applicable, but in a confused and imperfect way.

It is scarcely necessary to observe that variety, as a character of beauty, owes its effect to the need of changing impressions, in order to enliven our sensibility, which does not fail to become inactive under the long-continued impression of the same stimulant.

It is connected with this variety that unequal numbers are preferred, as we see in the number of flowers and of their petals, in that of leaves grouped together, and in the indentations of these leaves.

From all this springs the fourth and last characteristic of this second species of beauty—namely, contrast. This strikes us when we at once look at the rigid stem and bending boughs, and all the variety which the latter display.

It will be observed, that of all the characteristics of beauty, none tend to render our perceptions so vivid as variety and contrast.

I conclude this section with a few remarks on the errors which Alison has committed on this subject.

“In the rose,” says that writer, “and the white lily, and in the tribe of flowering shrubs, the same bending form assumed by the stem is felt as a defect ; and instead of impressing us with the idea of delicacy, leads us to behold the operation of some force to twist it into this direction.”—This, however, is no defect arising from the bending



form's not being abstractly more beautiful, but from its being contrary to the nature of the stem of flowering shrubs to bend, from its being, as he himself observes, the result of some force to twist it.

He asserts, however, that in plants, angular forms are beautiful, when they are expressive of fineness, of tenderness, of delicacy, or such affecting qualities; and he thinks that this may perhaps appear from the consideration of the following instances.

"The myrtle, for instance, is generally reckoned a beautiful form, yet the growth of its stem is perpendicular, the junction of its branches form regular and similar angles, and their direction is in straight or angular lines. The known delicacy, however, and tenderness of the vegetable, at least in this climate, prevail over the general expression of the form, and give it the same beauty which we generally find in forms of a contrary kind."—The mistake here committed is in supposing the beauty of the myrtle to depend on its angularity, instead of its being evergreen, fragrant, and suggesting pleasures of association.

"How much more beautiful," he says, "is the rose-tree when its buds begin to blow, than afterwards, when its flowers are full and in their greatest perfection! yet in this first situation, its form has much less winding surface, and is much more composed of straight lines and of angles, than afterwards, when the weight of the flower weighs down the feeble branches, and describes the easiest and most varied curves."—But he answers himself by adding, "The circumstance of its youth, a circumstance in all cases so affecting, the delicacy of its blossom, so well ex-



pressed by the care which nature has taken in surrounding the opening bud with leaves, prevail so much upon our imagination, that we behold the form itself with more delight in this situation than afterwards, when it assumes the more general form of delicacy."

"There are few things in the vegetable world," he says, "more beautiful than the knotted and angular stem of the balsam, merely from its singular transparency, which it is impossible to look at without a strong impression of the fineness and delicacy of the vegetable."—But it is its transparency, not its angularity, that is beautiful.

The beauty of colour is not less conspicuous than that of form in this class of beings.

### SECTION III.

#### ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY IN THINKING BEINGS.

I have next to show that, in thinking beings, while the characters of inanimate, and those of living beauty are still more or less continued, new characteristics are also added to them.

I. In animals, accordingly, the bones bear a close analogy to the wood of plants. They generally assume the same rounded forms; but, as thinking beings are necessarily moving ones, their bones are hollow to combine lightness with strength, and they are separated by joints to permit flexion and extension.

II. As animals, like plants, grow and reproduce, a portion of their general organization, their vascular system, which serves the purpose of growth and re-



production, consists like plants, of trunks, branches, etc., and the surface of their bodies, the skin, is formed by a tissue of these vessels. Accordingly, both the vessels themselves, and the tissue which they form, present the delicacy, the bending, the variety, and the contrast which are the characters of the preceding species of beauty.

The undulating and serpentine lines which art seeks always to design in its most beautiful productions, exist in greater number at the surface of the human body than at that of any other animal. Wherever, as Hogarth observes, "for the sake of the necessary motion of the parts, with proper strength and agility, the insertions of the muscles are too hard and sudden, their swellings too bold, or the hollows between them too deep, for their outlines to be beautiful; nature softens these hardnesses, and plumps up these vacancies with a proper supply of fat, and covers the whole with the soft, smooth, springy, and, in delicate life, almost transparent skin, which, conforming itself to the external shape of all the parts beneath, expresses to the eye the idea of its contents with the utmost delicacy of beauty and grace."

It is principally in the features of the face, as has often been observed, and on the surface of the torso and of the members of a beautiful woman, that these delicate, bending, varied and contrasted lines are multiplied: by their union, they mark the outlines of different parts, as in the region of the neck, of the bosom, at the shoulders, on the surface of the abdomen, on the sides, and principally in the gradual transitions from the head to the neck, and from the loins to the inferior extremities.

These lines vary under different circumstances;



much enbonpoint producing round lines, and leanness or old age producing straight ones.

Woman and man stand pre-eminent among animals as to this kind of beauty; and to them succeed the swifter animals, as the horse, the stag, etc.

The animals, on the contrary, of which the surface presents right lines and square forms, are correspondingly deprived of beauty; as the toad, the hog, and all the animals which seem to us ugly.

In all animals, also, the beauty of colour, even when slightly varied, becomes extremely interesting. In human beauty, considerable variety is produced by the different shades of the skin.

Such indeed is the variety resulting from all this, that some degree even of intricacy is produced. The undulating lines which cross in every direction, and the tortuous paths of the eye, are the means of an agreeable complication.

Hence Burke, following Hogarth, says, "Observe that part of a beautiful woman where she is perhaps the most beautiful, about the neck and breasts: the smoothness, the softness, the easy and insensible swell, the variety of the surface, which is never for the smallest space the same, the deceitful maze, through which the unsteady eye slides giddily, without knowing where to fix, or whither it is carried. Is not this a demonstration of that change of surface, continual, and yet hardly perceptible at any point, which forms one of the great constituents of beauty?"

The hair affords an excellent instance of this agreeable complication. Soft curls agitated by the wind have been the theme of every poet. And yet, says Hogarth, "to show how excess ought to be avoided in intricacy, as well as in every other principle, the



very same head of hair, wisped and matted together, would make the most disagreeable figure; because the eye would be perplexed, and at a fault, and unable to trace such a confused number of uncomposed and entangled lines."

III. But animals have a higher system of organs and functions which peculiarly distinguishes them, and which presents new and peculiar characteristics of beauty. This consists of the organs by which they receive impressions from, and re-act upon, the objects around them,—the first organs which nature presents having altogether external relations, and the first consequently in which we look for fitness for any purpose.

The importance of fitness to the beauty of such objects is learnt imperceptibly. Lines and forms, though the most elegant, fail to please us, if ill distributed in this respect; and objects to a great extent destitute of the other characters of natural beauty, become beautiful when regarded in relation to fitness. Thus would this sense appear to be so powerful, as in some measure to regulate our other perceptions of beauty.

It is fitness which leads us to admire in one animal, what would displease us if found in another. "The variety," says Barry, "and union of parts, which we call beautiful in a greyhound, are pleasing in consequence of the idea of agility which they convey. In other animals, less agility is united with more strength; and indeed all the different arrangements please because they indicate either different qualities, different degrees of qualities, or the different combinations of them."

In relation to the various fitness of the human



body, the same writer says, "We should not increase the beauty of the female bosom, by the addition of another protuberance; and the exquisite undulating transitions from the convex to the concave tendencies could not be multiplied with any success. In fine, our rule for judging of the mode and degree of this combination of variety and unity, seems to be no other than that of its fitness, and conformity to the designation of each species."

But it is less necessary for me to adduce authorities in support of this truth, than to answer the objections that have been made to it by some of the ablest writers on the subject,—objections which have generally their origin in the narrow views which these men have taken, and in those partial hypotheses which, even when true, led them to reject all other truth.

"It is said," observes Burke, "that the idea of a part's being well adapted to answer its end, is one cause of beauty, or indeed beauty itself. . . . In framing this theory, I am apprehensive that experience was not sufficiently consulted. For, on that principle, the wedge-like snout of a swine, with its tough cartilage at the end, the little sunk eyes, and the whole make of the head, so well adapted to its offices of digging and rooting, would be extremely beautiful."—And so they are, when the beauty of fitness for their purpose is considered; but that purpose being the mere growth and fattening of an animal of sensual and dirty habits, it is a fallacy to represent this, without explanation, as a fair proof of the absence of connexion between fitness and beauty.

"If beauty in our own species," says the same



writer, "was annexed to use, men would be much more lovely than women; and strength and agility would be considered as the only beauties."—Burke was a stringer of fine words, not for woman, but for queens, when that served a selfish and venal purpose. The sentence just quoted shows that his gallantry was as ignorant as it was mean. He here asserts, by implication, that women are less useful than men, although it is to women that the care of the whole human race, during its most helpless years, is committed, and although they take upon themselves all that half of the duties of life which men are as little capable of performing, as women are of performing the portion suited to men.

"And," says he, "I appeal to the first and most natural feelings of mankind, whether, on beholding a beautiful eye, or a well-fashioned mouth, or a well-turned leg, any ideas of their being well fitted for seeing, eating, or running, ever present themselves."—Is running, then, the proper use of the leg in woman! Rousseau more truly thought its use was to *fail* in running, or *not* to run! Is eating the only use of her mouth! This, too, from the man who deplored that "the age of chivalry was gone!"—Nevertheless, I will venture to assert that such things never were, and never will be, seen, without suggesting ideas of fitness of some kind or other.

"There is," he proceeds, "another notion current, pretty closely allied to the former; that perfection is the constituent cause of beauty. This opinion has been made to extend much further than to sensible objects. But in these, so far is perfection, considered as such, from being the cause of beauty, that this quality, where it is highest in the female sex, almost



always carries with it an idea of weakness and imperfection."—For this plain reason, that female perfection is utterly incompatible with great muscular perfection or strength, which would indeed be injurious to the performance of every feminine function.

We may now advance another step in the subject under discussion. What then, are the peculiar physical characters of beings thus possessing sense and motion, and thus characterized by fitness?

"It must be remembered," says Knight, "that irregularity is the general characteristic of trees, and regularity that of animals."—It would have been more correct to say that symmetry is this peculiar characteristic. There is little resemblance between the parts of one side, and it is symmetry which results from the uniform disposition of double parts, and from the regular division of single ones.

Hence an agreeable impression is produced by the corresponding disposition and the exact resemblance of the eyes, of the eye-brows, of the ears, of the hemispheres of the bosom, and of the different parts of which the limbs are composed; and the forehead, the nose, the mouth, the abdomen, the back, are agreeably distinguished by means of the median line which divides them.

It appears that the eye is pleased by the exactness of corresponding parts; and that symmetry is the first character of beauty in thinking beings.

Occasional irregularity makes us better appreciate the importance of symmetry. The oblique direction of the eyes, squinting, twisting of the nose or lips, unequal magnitude of the hemispheres of the bosom, or unequal length of the limbs, disfigure the most beautiful person.



But how does symmetry contribute to fitness, or why is it necessary?

"All our limbs and organs," says Payne Knight, "serve us in pairs, and by mutual co-operation with each other: whence the habitual association of ideas has taught us to consider this uniformity as indispensable to the beauty and perfection of the animal form. There is no reason to be deduced from any abstract consideration of the nature of things, why an animal should be more ugly and disgusting for having only one eye, or one ear, than for having only one nose or one mouth; yet if we were to meet with a beast with one eye, or two noses, or two mouths, in any part of the world, we should, without inquiry, decide it to be a monster, and turn from it with abhorrence: neither is there any reason, in the nature of things, why a strict parity, or relative equality, in the correspondent limbs and features of a man or a horse, should be absolutely essential to beauty, and absolutely destructive of it in the roots and branches of a tree. But, nevertheless, the Creator having formed the one regular, and the other irregular, we habitually associate ideas of regularity to the perfection of the one, and ideas of irregularity to the perfection of the other; and this habit has been so unvaried as to have become natural."

This is the common cant of every weak man at a loss for a reason. He screens his own helplessness by lugging in the Creator; and then he hopes that the solemnity of the Creator's presence, thus irreverently procured, will silence his antagonist. Now, it is not by any "habitual association" with "our limbs and organs serving us in pairs," that we are "taught to consider this uniformity indispensable to



beauty," but because, independent of all association, we could not conveniently walk upon one leg, or indeed on any unequal number of legs: and there being two sides in the moving organs, there are necessarily two in the sensitive organs, which are mere portions of the same general system. Thus it is locomotion to be performed that renders "a strict parity, or relative equality, in the correspondent limbs and features of a man or a horse absolutely essential to beauty; and it is the absence of locomotion which renders it utterly worthless, and therefore very rare, in "the roots and branches of a tree."

In animals, proportion is not less essential than symmetry. It is indeed the second character of this kind of beauty. As this part of the subject has been perfectly well treated by Mr. Alison, I need only quote what he has said.

"It is this expression of fitness which is, I apprehend, the source of the beauty of what is strictly and properly called proportion in the parts of the human form.

"We expect a different form and a different conformation of limbs, in a running footman and a waterman, in a wrestler and a racing groom, in a shepherd and a sailor, etc.

"They who are conversant in the productions of the fine arts, must have equally observed, that the forms and proportions of features, which the sculptor and the painter have given to their works, are very different, according to the nature of the character they represent, and the emotion they wish to excite. The form or proportions of the features of Jove are different from those of Hercules; those of Apollo, from those of Ganymede; those of the Fawn, from



those of the Gladiator. In female beauty, the form and proportions in the features of Juno are very different from those of Venus; those of Minerva, from those of Diana; those of Niobe, from those of the Graces. All, however, are beautiful; because all are adapted with exquisite taste to the characters they wish the countenance to express."

In "the Hercules and the Antinous, the Jupiter and the Apollo, we find that not only the proportions of the form, but those of every limb, are different; and that the pleasure we feel in these proportions arises from their exquisite fitness for the physical ends which the artists were consulting.

"The illustration, however, may be made still more precise; for, even in the same countenance, and in the same hour, the same form of feature may be beautiful or otherwise."

#### SECTION IV.

##### ELEMENTS OF BEAUTY AS EMPLOYED IN OBJECTS OF ART.

I divide the Arts into the useful, the ornamental, and the intellectual, commonly called the fine arts; and I shall endeavour to show, that the objects of each of these are characterized by a peculiar kind of beauty, corresponding to one of those already described.

I shall endeavour to show that the objects of the useful arts are characterized by the simple geometrical forms which belong to inanimate beings; that those of the ornamental arts are characterized by the delicate, bending, varied and contrasted forms of living beings; and that those of the intellectual arts are, in



their highest efforts characterized chiefly by thinking forms, as in gesture, sculpture, painting, or by functions of mind actually exercised, in oratory, poetry, music.

In all these arts, purpose is implied—not purpose in the hypothetical sense, as applied to the existence, conditions, and objects of natural beings—but in the common intelligible sense of the word, as expressing the intention of men in the pursuit of these arts.

*Beauty of Useful Objects.*

Here the purpose being utility, this kind of beauty arises from the perception of means as adapted to an end, which of course implies, the parts of anything being fitted to answer the purpose of the whole.

This implies an act of understanding and judgment: for of no product of useful art can we perceive the extrinsic beauty, until we know its destination, and the relation which that involves.

When these are known, so powerful is the sense of utility, that, though deviation from the elementary beauty never ceases to be felt; yet that sense sanctions it to a great extent. Hence it is that an irregular dwelling-house may become beautiful, when its convenience is striking. Hence it is that, in the forms of furniture, machines, and instruments, their beauty arises chiefly from this consideration; and that every form becomes beautiful by association, where it is perfectly adapted to its end.

The greater, however, the elementary beauty, that can be introduced in useful objects, the more obvious will their utility be, and the more beautiful will they universally appear. This will be granted the moment I mention simplicity.



Of all the elements of beauty already spoken of—of all the means of producing accordant and agreeable relations, simplicity appears to be the most efficient; and in all the useful arts, no elementary consideration recommends their objects so much.

This implies all the rest, regularity, uniformity, proportion, order, etc., as far as is compatible with purpose.

Thus, in regard to uniformity, says some one, a number of things destined for the same purpose, as chairs, spoons, etc., cannot be too uniform, because they are adapted to uniform purposes; but it would be absurd to give to objects destined for one purpose the form suited to those destined for another.

So also the objects of useful art will resemble in form precisely as they resemble in purpose; and where the purpose is similar, and the deviation which is admissible is slight, this becomes a subject of great nicety, and, if ornament be at the same time admissible, a subject of exquisite taste.

It was by the transcendent exercise of these qualities, that the Greeks succeeded in fixing the orders of architecture. The most beautiful columns would have shocked the sight, if their mass had not corresponded to that of the edifice which they sustained; and the difference which existed in this respect, required a difference of ornament.

Home, indeed, observes, that “writers on architecture insist much upon the proportions of a column, and assign different proportions to the Doric, Ionic, and Corinthian; but no architect will maintain, that the most accurate proportions contribute more to use, than several that are less accurate and less agreeable.”

That such a man should have committed such an



error is surprising. It seems evident that the different proportion in the columns of these orders is admirably suited to the different quantity of matter in their entablatures. A greater superincumbent mass, required shorter and thicker columns; a less superincumbent mass, longer and slenderer ones. Many experiments, much observation, were requisite to determine this; but the Greeks had the means of making them, and solved every problem on the subject; and the result of the perfection they attained is, that all err who depart from the truth they have determined.

It was, again, the differing quantities of matter in the entablatures, and the accurately corresponding dimensions of the columns that determined, of course, amidst infinite experiment and observation, the nature of their ornaments. Hence the Doric is distinguished by simplicity; the Ionic by elegance; and the Corinthian by lightness, in ornament as well as in proportion.

Even, therefore, if we were to destroy all the associations of elegance, of magnificence, of costliness, and still more than all, of antiquity, which are so strongly connected with such forms, the pleasure which their proportions would afford, would remain, as in all cases where means are best adapted to their end.

In his objections to proportion as an element of beauty, Burke only confounds this kind of beauty with that which I have next to describe.

“The effects of proportion and fitness,” he says, “at least so far as they proceed from a mere consideration of the work itself, produce approbation, the acquiescence of the understanding, but not love, nor any passion of that species. When we examine



the structure of a watch, when we come to know thoroughly the use of every part of it, satisfied as we are with the fitness of the whole, we are far enough from perceiving anything like beauty in the watch-work itself; but let us look on the case, the labour of some curious artist in engraving, with little or no idea of use, we shall have a much livelier idea of beauty than we ever could have had from the watch itself, though the master-piece of Graham.

It is an emotion of pleasure which is the inevitable result of the perception of beauty, not love, nor any passion of the kind. These will, or will not follow, according to the nature of the object, and of the mind of the observer. A hill, a valley, or a rivulet may be beautiful, and it will excite an emotion of pleasure when its beauty is discerned; but it may produce no desire or passion of love. There may exist, then, the beauty of utility, as to the structure of the watch, and that of ornament, as to its case; and some minds will more readily perceive the one; others, the other.

When Burke adds, "In beauty, the effect is previous to any knowledge of the use; but to judge of proportion, we must know the end for which any work is designed;" he forgets, that in the instance of the barber's block, etc., he showed that the perception of beauty, as well as proportion, required observation, experience, and reflection.

*Beauty of Ornamental Objects.*

There are three great arts which, under circumstances of high civilization, become ornamental, namely, landscape gardening, architecture, and dress,



—the particular arts by which our persons are more or less closely invested;<sup>1</sup> and all of them, then, require beauty of the second kind, that which belongs particularly to vegetable beings, and is characterized by delicate, bending, varied and contrasted forms.

All these, regarded as ornamental arts, have chiefly bodily and sensual pleasures for their purpose; and this I consider as distinguishing them from the intellectual arts which have a higher purpose.

Of landscape gardening, the materials are plants, and therefore its beauty is evidently dependent on, or rather composed of, theirs.

The same kind of beauty will be found in every ornamental art. Hence, Alison says, “The greater part of beautiful forms in nature, are to be found in the vegetable kingdom, in the forms of flowers, of foliage, of shrubs, and in those assumed by the young shoots of trees. It is from them, accordingly, that almost all those forms have been imitated, which have been employed by artists, for the purposes of ornament and elegance.”

On this kind of beauty, mistaking it for the only one, Hogarth founded his peculiar doctrine. “He adopts two lines, on which, according to him, the beauty of figure principally depends. One is the waving line, or a curve bending gently in opposite directions. This he calls the line of beauty; and he shows how often it is found in flowers, shells, and various works of nature; while it is common also in the figures designed by painters and sculptors, for the purpose of decoration. The other line, which he

<sup>1</sup> The common character of these arts has been overlooked.



calls the line of grace, is the former waving line, twisted round some solid body. Twisted pillars, and twisted horns, exhibit it. In all the instances which he mentions, variety plainly appears to be so important an element of this kind of beauty, that he states a portion of the truth, when he defines the art of drawing pleasing forms, to be the art of varying well; for the curve line, so much the favourite of painters, derives much of its beauty from its perpetual bending and variation from the stiff regularity of the straight line." It is evident, however, that in this, he mistakes one kind of beauty for all.

Of architecture, considered as a fine art, much of the beauty depends on the imitation of vegetable forms. Employing materials which require the best characteristics of the first kind of beauty; it, in its choicest and ornamented parts, imitates both the rigid trunks, and the delicate and bending forms of plants. Its columns tapering upward, are copied from the trunks of trees; and their decorations are suited with consummate art to their dimensions, and the weight they support. The simple Doric has little ornament; the elegant Ionic has more; the light Corinthian has most.

On the subject of these finely calculated ornaments, some observations have struck me, which I have not seen mentioned elsewhere. The Doric presents only columns, without any other ornament than that of which their mere form admits. The Ionic expresses increased lightness, by the interposition of its volute, as if the superincumbent weight had but gently pressed a soft solid into a scroll. The Corinthian expresses the utmost lightness, by forming its capitals of foliage, as if the weight above them could not



crush even a leaf. The Composite expresses gaiety, by adding flowers to the foliage. It is from imperfect views of this, that the meaning and effect of caryatides have been mistaken: instead of being oppressed by weight, they seem, when well employed, to have no weight to support.

In nearly all internal architectural decorations, it is the delicate, bending, varied and contrasted vegetable forms, which are imitated.

“There is scarce a room, in any house whatever,” says Hogarth, “where one does not see the waving line employed in some way or other. How inelegant would the shapes of all our moveables be without it; how very plain and unornamental the mouldings of cornices and chimney-pieces, without the variety introduced by the ogee member, which is entirely composed of waving lines.”

The distinctions I have here made, are farther illustrated by the remarks of Alison, who says, “These ornaments being executed in a very hard and durable substance, are in fact only beautiful when they appear but as minute parts of the whole. The great constituent parts of every building require direct and angular lines, because in such parts we require the expression of stability and strength. It is only in the minute and delicate parts of the work, that any kind of ornament is attempted with propriety; and whenever ornaments exceed in size, in their quantity of matter, or in the prominence of their relief, that proportion, which, in point of lightness or delicacy, we expect them to hold with respect to the whole of the building, the imitation of the most beautiful vegetable forms does not preserve them from the censure of clumsiness and deformity.”



In dress, considered as an ornamental art, and, as practised by the sex which chiefly studies it, the chief beauty depends on the adoption of winding forms in drapery, and of wreaths of flowers for the head, etc. These are essential to the variety and contrast, as well as to the gaiety which that sex desires.

“Uniformity,” says Hogarth, “is chiefly complied with, in dress, on account of fitness, and seems to be extended not much further than dressing both arms alike, and having the shoes of the same colour. For when any part of dress has not the excuse of fitness or propriety for its uniformity of parts, the ladies always call it formal.”

These irregular, varying, and somewhat complicated draperies, excite that active curiosity, and those movements of imagination, to which skilful women never neglect to address themselves in modern costume.

It is with the same feeling and intention, whether these be defined or not, that, in the head-dress, they seek for bending lines and circumvolutions, and that they combine variously the waves and the tresses of the hair.

For the same reason, a feather or a flower is never placed precisely over the middle of the forehead; and if two are employed, great care is taken that their positions are dissimilar.

It has sometimes struck me as remarkable, that precious stones are almost always arranged differently from flowers. While the latter are placed irregularly, and in waving lines, not only on the head, but the bosom, and the skirt of the dress; the former are in general regularly placed, either on the medium line



of the person, as the middle of the forehead and, in eastern countries, of the nose, or symmetrically in similar pendants from each ear, and bracelets on the arms and wrists.

The instinctive feeling which gives origin to this, is, that flowers adorn the system of life and reproduction, and by their colour and smell, associate with its emotions, which they also express and communicate to others—they, therefore, assume the varied forms of that system ; whereas diamonds, attached generally to mental organs, or organs of sense, are significant of mental feelings, love of splendour, distinction, pride, etc.—they, therefore, assume the symmetrical form of these organs. Hence, too, flowers are recommended to the young ; diamonds are permitted only to the old.

*Beauty of Intellectual Objects.*

I have already said, that the intellectual arts are, in their highest efforts, characterized chiefly by animal forms, as in gesture, sculpture, and painting, or by animal functions actually exercised, in oratory, poetry, and music.

In the useful arts, the purpose is utility; in the ornamental arts it is bodily or sensual pleasures; and in the intellectual arts, it is the pleasure of imagination.

The first elements of beauty, however, are not forgotten in these arts. As simplicity is conspicuous in the works of nature, so is it a condition of beauty in all the operations of mind. In philosophy, general theorems become beautiful from this simplicity ; and polished manners receive from it dignity and grace. The intellectual arts are especially dependent upon it : it has been a striking character of their most



illustrious cultivators, and of their very highest efforts.

How much the characters and accidents of elementary beauty influence intellectual art, has been well shown by Mr. Knight.

“In the higher class of landscapes,” he says, “whether in nature or in art, the mere sensual gratification of the eye is comparatively so small, as scarcely to be attended to : but yet, if there occur a single spot, either in the scene or the picture, offensively harsh and glaring—if the landscape gardener, in the one, or the picture cleaner, in the other, have exerted their unhappy talents of polishing, all the magic instantly vanishes, and the imagination avenges the injury offered to the sense. The glaring and unharmonious spot, being the most prominent and obtrusive, irresistibly attracts the attention, so as to interrupt the repose of the whole, and leaves the mind no place to rest upon.”

“It is, in some respects,” he observes, “the same with the sense of hearing. The mere sensual gratification, arising from the melody of an actor’s voice, is a very small part indeed of the pleasure, which we receive from the representation of a fine drama ; but, nevertheless, if a single note of the voice be absolutely cracked and out of tune, so as to offend and disgust the ear, it will completely destroy the effect of the most skilful acting, and render all the sublimity and pathos of the finest tragedy ludicrous.”

This, I may observe, is a concession of much that he elsewhere inconsistently contends for ; for sensual beauty could never act thus powerfully, if it possessed not fundamental importance as an element even in the most complex beauty.



That the second kind of beauty also enters into the acts or products of intellectual beauty, is sufficiently illustrated by the observation of Hogarth, who on this subject observes, that all the common and necessary motions for the business of life are performed by men in straight or plain lines, while all the graceful and ornamental movements are made in waving lines.

As Alison has given the best view of the history and character of beauty in the intellectual arts, as that indeed constitutes the most valuable portion of his work, I shall conclude this section by a greatly abridged view of these, as nearly as possible in his own words.

There is no production of taste, which has not many qualities of a very different kind ; and our sense of the beauty or sublimity of every object accordingly depends upon the quality or qualities of it which we consider.

This, Mr. Alison might have observed, is in great measure dependent upon our will. We can generally, when we please, confine our consideration of it to the qualities that least excite pleasurable or painful emotion, and that can least interest the imagination.

It is in consequence of this, that the exercise of criticism always destroys, for the time, our sensibility to the beauty of every composition, and that habits of this kind generally destroy the sensibility of taste.

When, on the other hand, the emotions of sublimity or beauty are produced, it will be found that some affection is uniformly first excited by the presence of the object ; and whether the general impression we receive is that of gaiety, or tenderness, or melancholy, or solemnity, or terror, etc., we have never any difficulty of determining.



But whatever may be the nature of that simple emotion which any object is fitted to excite, if it produce not a train of kindred thought in our minds, we are conscious only of that simple emotion.

In many cases, on the contrary, we are conscious of a train of thought being immediately awakened in the imagination, analogous to the character of expression of the original object.

“ Thus, when we feel either the beauty or sublimity of natural scenery,—the gay lustre of a morning in spring, or the mild radiance of a summer evening,—the savage majesty of a wintry storm, or the wild magnificence of the tempestuous ocean,—we are conscious of a variety of images in our minds, very different from those which the objects themselves present to the eye. Trains of pleasing or of solemn thought arise spontaneously within our minds; our hearts swell with emotions, of which the objects before us seem to afford no adequate cause; and we are never so much satiated with delight, as when, in recalling our attention, we are unable (little able, perhaps, and less disposed) to trace either the progress or the connexion of those thoughts, which have passed with so much rapidity through our imagination.

“ The effect of the different arts of taste is similar. The landscapes of Claude Lorraine, the poetry of Milton, the music of the greatest masters, excite feeble emotions in our minds when our attention is confined to the qualities they present to our senses, or when it is to such qualities of their composition that we turn our regard. It is then only we feel the sublimity or beauty of their productions, when our imaginations are kindled by their power, when we



lose ourselves amid the number of images that pass before our minds, and when we waken at last from this play of fancy, as from the charm of a romantic dream.

“The degree in which the emotions of sublimity or beauty are felt, is in general proportioned to the prevalence of those relations of thought in the mind, upon which this exercise of imagination depends. The principal relation which seems to take place in those trains of thought that are produced by objects of taste, is that of resemblance; the relation, of all others the most loose and general, and which affords the greatest range of thought for our imagination to pursue. Wherever, accordingly, these emotions are felt, it will be found, not only that this is the relation which principally prevails among our ideas, but that the emotion itself is proportioned to the degree in which it prevails.

“What, for instance, is the impression we feel from the scenery of spring? The soft and gentle green with which the earth is spread, the feeble texture of the plants and flowers, the young of animals just entering into life, and the remains of winter yet lingering among the woods and hills,—all conspire to infuse into our minds somewhat of that fearful tenderness with which infancy is usually beheld. With such a sentiment, how innumerable are the ideas which present themselves to our imagination! ideas, it is apparent, by no means confined to the scene before our eyes, or to the possible desolation which may yet await its infant beauty, but which almost involuntarily extend themselves to analogies with the life of man, and bring before us all those images of hope or fear, which,



according to our peculiar situations, have the dominion of our heart!—The beauty of autumn is accompanied with a similar exercise of thought.

“Whatever increases this exercise or employment of imagination, increases also the emotion of beauty or sublimity.

“This is very obviously the effect of all associations. There is no man who has not some interesting associations with particular scenes, or airs, or books, and who does not feel their beauty or sublimity enhanced to him by such connexions. The view of the house where one was born, of the school where one was educated, and where the gay years of infancy were passed, is indifferent to no man.

“In the case of those trains of thought, which are suggested by objects either of sublimity or beauty, it will be found, that they are in all cases composed of ideas capable of exciting some affection or emotion; and that not only the whole succession is accompanied with that peculiar emotion which we call the emotion of beauty or sublimity, but that every individual idea of such a succession is in itself productive of some simple emotion or other.

“Thus the ideas suggested by the scenery of spring, are ideas productive of emotions of cheerfulness, of gladness, and of tenderness. The images suggested by the prospect of ruins, are images belonging to pity, to melancholy, and to admiration. The ideas, in the same manner, awakened by the view of the ocean in a storm, are ideas of power, of majesty, and of terror.”

To prevent circumlocution, such ideas may be termed ideas of emotion; and the effect which is



produced upon the mind, by objects of taste, may be considered as consisting in the production of a regular or consistent train of ideas of emotion.

“In those trains which are suggested by objects of sublimity or beauty, however slight the connexion between individual thoughts may be, it will be found that there is always some general principle of connexion which pervades the whole, and gives them some certain definite character. They are either gay, or pathetic, or melancholy, or solemn, or awful, or elevating, etc., according to the nature of the emotion which is first excited. Thus the prospect of a serene evening in summer, produces first an emotion of peacefulness and tranquillity, and then suggests a variety of images corresponding to this primary impression. The sight of a torrent, or of a storm, in the same manner, impresses us first with sentiments of awe, or solemnity, or terror, and then awakens in our minds a series of conceptions allied to this peculiar emotion.”

The intellectual, or fine arts, are those whose objects are thus addressed to the imagination; and the pleasures they afford are described, by way of distinction, as the pleasures of the imagination.

#### SUMMARY OF THIS CHAPTER.

Thus, by analysis, generalization and systematization of the materials which the best writers present, I have, in this chapter, endeavoured to take new and larger views; and, by an examination of the elements of beauty, I have endeavoured to fix its doctrines upon an immovable basis.



I have shown that there exist elements of beauty equally invariable in themselves, and in the kind of effect they produce upon the mind; that these elements are modified, varied, and complicated, as we advance from the most simple to the most complex class of natural beings, or of the arts which relate to these respectively; that the elements of beauty in inanimate beings, consist in the simplicity, regularity, uniformity, proportion, order, etc., of those geometrical forms which are so intimately connected with mere existence; that the elements of beauty in living beings, consist in adding to the preceding the delicacy, bending, variety, contrast, etc., which are connected with growth and reproduction; that the elements of beauty in thinking beings, consist in adding to the preceding the symmetry, proportion,<sup>1</sup> etc., which are connected with fitness for sense, thought, and motion; that the elements of beauty in the objects of useful art, consist in the same simplicity, regularity, uniformity, proportion, order, etc., of geometrical forms which belong to inanimate beings; that the elements of beauty in the objects of ornamental art consist in the same delicacy, bending, variety, contrast, etc., which belong to living beings; and that the elements of beauty, in the objects of intellectual art, consist in thinking forms, in gesture, sculpture and painting, or in functions of mind actually exercised, in oratory, poetry, and music.

The elements of beauty have hitherto been confounded by many writers, as more or less applicable to objects of all kinds; and as this general and con-

<sup>1</sup> Proportion is here employed, not as expressing an intrinsic relation, as in the beauty of inanimate beings, but as expressing an extrinsic relation to fitness for ends.



fused application was easily disproved as to many objects, uncertainty and doubt has been thrown over the whole. The remaining writers have consequently been led to adopt, as characters of beauty, only one or two of these elements, which were consequently capable of application only to one or two classes of its objects. Hence, no subject of human inquiry has hitherto been left in a more disgraceful condition than this, the very foundation of taste.

I do not hesitate to say that, owing to the near approximations to truth, and the insensible transitions into error, which I have found in every writer, and the immense mass of confused materials which they present, this subject has cost me more trouble than any one I have ever investigated, except that of my work on the mind;<sup>1</sup> nor without some physiological knowledge, do I think tasks of this kind at all practicable. Generally speaking, each branch of knowledge is most surely advanced by acquaintance with its related branches; and philosophers cannot too much bear in mind the words of Cicero,—  
“Etenim omnes artes quæ ad humanitatem pertinent, habent quoddam commune vinculum, et quasi cognatione quadam inter se continentur.”

<sup>1</sup> THE NERVOUS SYSTEM, ANATOMICAL AND PHYSIOLOGICAL: in which the functions of the various parts of the Brain are for the first time assigned.



## APPENDIX TO THE PRECEDING CHAPTERS.

### SECTION I.

#### NATURE OF THE PICTURESQUE.<sup>1</sup>

IN landscape, the nature of the beautiful and the sublime seems to be better understood than that of the picturesque. There are few disputes as to the former; many as to the latter. These disputes, moreover, are not as to *what is picturesque*, but as to *what picturesque is*.

Payne Knight asserts, that the picturesque has no distinctive character, and merely designates what a painter would imitate. Price, on the contrary, has given so many admirable illustrations of it, that its characteristics are before every reader. Strange to tell, its nature or essence has not been penetrated, because these characteristics have not been rigidly analyzed.

Price has, indeed, generalized considerably on this subject, by showing that irregularity, roughness, etc., enter into all scenes of a picturesque description; and the examination of any one of them, will certainly verify the truth of his observation.

<sup>1</sup> Communicated by the writer to the Magazine of the Fine Arts, No. 11, for June, 1833.



Thus, on a remote country road, we often observe the deep ruts on its surface which in winter would render it impassable,—the huge and loose moss-grown stone, ready to encumber it by falling from the bank,—the stunted pollard by its side, whose roots are exposed by the earth falling away from it, and which must itself be swept away by the first wind that may blow against it in an unfavourable direction,—the almost ruined cottage, above and beyond these, whose gable is propped up by an old and broken wheel, and whose thatched roof, stained with every hue of moss or lichen, has, at one part, long fallen in,—the shaggy and ragged horse that browses among the rank weeds around it,—and the old man, bent with age, who leans over the broken gate in front of it.

Here, in every circumstance, is verified the irregularity and roughness which Price ascribes to the picturesque. But he has failed to observe, that *the irregularity and roughness are but the signs of that which interests the mind far more deeply*—namely, the universal DECAY which causes them. This is the essence of the picturesque—the charm in it which begets our sympathy.

Confining his remark merely to ruins, the author of “Observations on Gardening,” says, “At the sight of a ruin, reflections on the change, the decay, and the desolation before us naturally occur; and they introduce a long succession of others, all tinged with that melancholy which these have inspired; or if the monument revive the memory of former times, we do not stop at the simple fact which it records, but recollect many more coeval circumstances which we see, not perhaps as they were, but as they are



come down to us, venerable with age, and magnified by fame."—What is here said of ruins, and is indeed as to them sufficiently striking, is true of the picturesque universally, and it is only surprising that, amidst such disputes, this simple and obvious truth should not have been observed.

In landscape, therefore, the picturesque stands in the same relation to the beautiful and sublime, that the pathetic does to them in poetry. Hence, speaking also of ruins only, Alison says, "The images suggested by the prospect of ruins, are images belonging to pity, to melancholy, and to admiration."

A thousand illustrations might be given in support of this truth and the principle which it affords; but I think it better to leave these to the suggestion or the choice of every reader.

## SECTION II.

### CAUSE OF LAUGHTER.

This has been partly explained by Beattie, partly by Hobbes; and it is chiefly to vindicate the latter, who knew much more of the human mind than the people who have attacked him, that I write the pages immediately following.

Speaking of the quality in things which makes them provoke the pleasing emotion or sentiment of which laughter is the external sign, Beattie says, "It is an uncommon mixture of relation and contrariety exhibited, or supposed to be united, in the same assemblage." And elsewhere he says, "Laughter arises from the view of two or more inconsistent, unsuitable, or incongruous parts or



circumstances, considered as united in one complex object or assemblage, or as acquiring a sort of mutual relation from the peculiar manner in which the mind takes notice of them."

"The latter may arise from contiguity, from the relation of cause and effect, from unexpected likeness, from dignity and meanness, from absurdity, etc.

"Thus, at first view, the dawn of the morning, and a boiled lobster, seem utterly incongruous, but when a change of colour from black to red is suggested, we recognize a likeness, and consequently a relation, or ground of comparison.

"And here let it be observed, that the greater the number of incongruities that are blended in the same assemblage, the more ludicrous it will probably be. If, as in the last example, there be an opposition of dignity and meanness, as well as of likeness and dissimilitude, the effect of the contrast will be more powerful than if only one of these oppositions had appeared in the ludicrous idea."

This first part of the subject seems, indeed, so clear as to admit of no objection.

Hobbes, viewing more particularly the act of the mind, defines laughter to be a "sudden glory, arising from a sudden conception of some eminency in ourselves, by comparison with the infirmity of others, or with our own formerly." And elsewhere he says, "Men laugh at jests, the wit whereof always consisteth in the elegant discovering and conveying to our minds, some absurdity of another."<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Campbell objects that "contempt may be raised in a very high degree, both suddenly and un-

<sup>1</sup> Human Nature, chap. ix. § 13.



expectedly, without producing the least tendency to laugh." But if there exist that incongruity in the same assemblage described as the fundamental cause of this sudden conception of our own superiority, laughter, as Beattie has shown, "will always, or for the most part, excite the risible emotion, unless when the perception of it is attended with some other emotion of greater authority," dependent on custom, politeness, etc.

Dr. Campbell also observes, that, "laughter may be, and is daily, produced by the perception of incongruous associations, when there is no contempt.

"We often smile at a witty performance or passage, such as Butler's allusion to a boiled lobster, in his picture of the morning, when we are so far from conceiving any inferiority or turpitude in the author, that we greatly admire his genius, and wish ourselves possessed of that very turn of fancy which produced the drollery in question.

"Many have laughed at the queerness of the comparison in these lines,

'For rhyme the rudder is of verses,  
With which like ships they steer their courses ;'

who never dreamt that there was any person or party, practice or opinion, derided in them.

"If any admirer of the Hobbesian philosophy should pretend to discover some class of men whom the poet here meant to ridicule, he ought to consider, that if any one hath been tickled with the passage to whom the same thought never occurred, that single instance would be sufficient to subvert the doctrine, as it would show that there may be laughter where there is no triumph or glorying over anybody, and consequently no conceit of one's own superiority."



Now, the class of men laughed at in both cases is the same, namely, poets, whose lofty allusions are ridiculed by the former, and silly rhymes by the latter; nor can any one duly appreciate or be pleased with either, to whom this intention of the writer is not obvious. Who ever dreamed of "turpitude in the author," as Dr. Campbell supposes!

"As to the wag," says Beattie, "who amuses himself on the first of April with telling lies, he must be shallow indeed, if he hope by so doing to acquire any superiority over another man, whom he knows to be wiser and better than himself; for on these occasions the greatness of the joke, and the loudness of the laugh, are, if I rightly remember, in exact proportion to the sagacity of the person imposed on."—No doubt; but it is because he is thrown into an apparent and whimsical, though momentary, inferiority; and the greater his sagacity, the more amusing does this appear.

"Do we not," says he, "sometimes laugh at fortuitous combinations, in which, as no mental energy is concerned in producing them, their cannot be either fault or turpitude? Could not one imagine a set of people jumbled together by accident, so as to present a laughable group to those who know their characters?"—Undoubtedly; but then the slouch of one, and the rigidity of the other, etc., make both contemptible, as to physical characteristics at least, and there is no need of turpitude in either.

The strongest apparent objection, however, is that of Dr. Campbell, who says, "Indeed, men's telling their own blunders, even blunders recently committed, and laughing at them, a thing not uncommon, in very risible dispositions, is utterly inexplicable upon



Hobbes's system. For, to consider the thing only with regard to the laughter himself, there is to him no subject of glorying that is not counterbalanced by an equal subject of humiliation (he being both the person laughing, and the person laughed at), and these two subjects must destroy one another."

But he overlooks the precise terms employed by Hobbes, who says, "The passion of laughter is nothing else but sudden glory, arising from a sudden conception of some eminency in ourselves, by comparison with the infirmity of others, or with *our own formerly*. For men laugh at *the follies of themselves past*, when they come suddenly to remembrance, *except they bring with them any present dishonour*."

It is not therefore true, as Dr. Campbell says, that "with regard to others, he appears solely under the notion of inferiority, as the person triumphed over." He, on the contrary, appears as achieving a very glorious triumph—that, namely, over his own errors.

This shows also the error of Addison's remarks, that, "according to this account, when we hear a man laugh excessively, instead of saying that he is very merry, we ought to tell him that he is very proud."—A man may condemn the errors both of himself and others, without pride; and indeed, in condemning the former, he proves himself to be far above that sentiment, and verifies Dr. Campbell's remark, that no two characters more rarely meet in the same person, than that of a very risible man, and a very self-conceited supercilious man.

It is curious to see a great man, like Hobbes, thus attacked by less ones, who do not even understand him.



## SECTION III.

CAUSE OF THE PLEASURE RECEIVED FROM REPRESENTATIONS  
EXCITING PITY.

Many hypotheses have been proposed to explain this cause.

According to the Abbé Du Bos,<sup>1</sup> in order to get rid of listlessness, the mind seeks for emotions ; and the stronger these are the better. Hence the passions which in themselves are the most distressing, are, for this purpose, preferable to the pleasant, because they most effectually relieve the mind from the less endurable languor which preys upon it during inaction.

The sophistry of this explanation is evident.—Pleasant passions, as Dr. Campbell has shown, ought in every respect to have the advantage, because, while they preserve the mind from this state of inaction, they convey a feeling which is agreeable. Nor is it true that the stronger the emotion is, so much the fitter for this purpose ; for if we exceed a certain measure, instead of a sympathetic and delightful sorrow, we excite only horror and aversion. The most, therefore, that can be concluded from the Abbé's premises, is, that it is useful to excite passion of some kind or other, but not that the distressing ones are the fittest.

According to Fontenelle,<sup>2</sup> theatrical representation has almost the effect of reality ; but yet not altogether. We have still a certain idea of falsehood in the whole of what we see. We weep for the misfortunes of a

<sup>1</sup> *Reflexions Critiques sur la Poesie et sur la Peinture.*

<sup>2</sup> *Reflexions sur la Poetique.*



hero to whom we are attached. In the same instant, we comfort ourselves by reflecting, that it is nothing but a fiction.

The short answer to this is, that we are conscious of no such alteration as that here described.

According to David Hume, whose hypothesis is a kind of supplement to the former two, that which, "when the sorrow is not softened by fiction, raises a pleasure from the bosom of uneasiness, a pleasure, which still retains all the features and outward symptoms of distress and sorrow, is that very eloquence with which the melancholy scene is represented."

In reply, Dr. Campbell has shown that the aggravating of all the circumstances of misery in the representation, cannot make it be contemplated with pleasure, but must be the most effectual method for making it give greater pain; that the detection of the speaker's talents and address, which Hume's hypothesis implies, is in direct opposition to the fundamental maxim, that "it is essential to the art to conceal the art;" and that the supposition that there are two distinct effects produced by the eloquence on the hearers, one the sentiment of beauty, or of the harmony of oratorical numbers, the other the passion which the speaker purposes to raise in their minds, and that when the first predominates, the mixture of the two effects becomes exceedingly pleasant, and the reverse when the second is superior, is altogether imaginary.

According to Hawkesworth,<sup>1</sup> the compassion in question may be "resolved into that power of imagination, by which we apply the misfortunes of others to ourselves;" and we are said "to pity no longer

<sup>1</sup> Adventurer, No. 110.



than we fancy ourselves to suffer, and to be pleased only by reflecting that our sufferings are not real ; thus indulging a dream of distress, from which we can awake whenever we please, to exult in our security, and enjoy the comparison of the fiction with the truth."

This hypothesis is evidently too gross to need reply.

Dr. Campbell has answered the preceding hypothesis at great length, and quite satisfactorily. I regret to say that his own is as worthless, as well as remarkably confused and unintelligible.

To Burke, who wrote at a later period, it falls to my lot to reply at greater length.

"To examine this point concerning the effect of tragedy in a proper manner," says that writer, "we must previously consider how we are affected by the feelings of our fellow-creatures in circumstances of real distress. I am convinced we have a degree of delight, and that no small one, in the real misfortunes and pains of others ; for let the affection be what it will in appearance, if it does not make us shun such objects, if on the contrary it induces us to approach them, if it makes us dwell upon them, in this case I conceive we must have a delight or pleasure of some species or other in contemplating objects of this kind.

. . . Our delight in cases of this kind is very greatly heightened, if the sufferer be some excellent person who sinks under an unworthy fortune. . . . The delight we have in such things hinders us from shunning scenes of misery ; and the pains we feel, prompt us to relieve ourselves, in relieving those who suffer. . . . In imitated distress, the only difference is the pleasure resulting from the effects of imitation."



A more monstrous doctrine than this was never, perhaps, enunciated. A very little analysis will expose its fallacy.

In relation to events of this kind, there are three very distinct cases—real occurrence, subsequent inspection or historical narration, and dramatic representation; in each, the affection of the mind is very different; and nearly all the errors on this subject seem to have occurred from confounding them. Burke has done this in the greatest degree.

The real occurrence of unmerited suffering is beheld with no delight, but with unmixed pain, by every well constituted mind. Hume,<sup>1</sup> therefore, justly observes, that “the same object of distress, which pleases in a tragedy, were it really set before us, would give the most unfeigned uneasiness.” It is only by confounding this with the next case, of subsequent inspection or historical narration, that Burke gets into error here.

“We do not,” says Burke, “sufficiently distinguish what we would by no means choose to do [*or to see done*—he should have added] from what we should be eager enough to see if it was once done. We delight in seeing things [*after they are done*—he should have added], which so far from doing, our heartiest wishes would be to see redressed.”

That the additions I have made, more truly state the case, seems as evident, as it is, that they afford a very different conclusion from Burke's, of our beholding unmerited suffering with delight. But he himself proves this by the very instance which he gives in illustration of his doctrine.

“This noble capital,” he says, “the pride of

<sup>1</sup> Essay on Tragedy.



England and of Europe, I believe *no man is so strangely wicked as to desire to see destroyed* by a conflagration or an earthquake, though he should be removed himself to the greatest distance from the danger. But *suppose such a fatal accident to have happened*, what numbers from all parts would crowd to behold the ruins, and amongst them many who would have been content never to have seen London in its glory ? ”

Here the words which I have put in italics clearly show that I was right in the additions I suggested in his previous statement, and that he there confounded delight in seeing the infliction of unmerited suffering, with delight in seeing it after infliction, or of seeing it historically narrated ; for, in this, his illustration, it is the latter, and not the former, that he supposes — nay, he now says, “ no man is so strangely wicked as to desire to see destroyed ! ” etc. Indeed, it is quite plain that, supposing an attempt made to destroy London, so far would every one be from being delighted to see it done, that he would eagerly prevent it. There is here, therefore, on the part of this writer, only his common and characteristic confusion of ideas.

“ Choose a day,” he says, “ on which to represent the most sublime and affecting tragedy we have ; appoint the most favourite actors ; spare no cost upon the scenes and decorations ; unite the greatest efforts of poetry, painting, and music ; and when you have collected your audience, just at the moment when their minds are erect with expectation, let it be reported that a state-criminal of high rank, is on the point of being executed in the adjoining square ; in a moment the emptiness of the theatre would demon-



strate the comparative weakness of the imitative arts, and proclaim the triumph of the real sympathy."

This presents only another instance of want of discrimination. If the "state-criminal of high rank" were not a real criminal,—if he were an unmerited sufferer, the place of execution, supposing his rescue impossible, would assuredly be fled from by every person of feeling and honour; as we read of in the public papers lately, when a murder of that kind was perpetrated by some one of the base little jailor-princes of Germany. And we know that, in the case of legal perpetrations of that kind in England, even upon real criminals, none but the most degraded wretches go to witness such scenes.

In tragic representation, then, we know that the suffering is not real, else should we fly. There have indeed, in such cases, been instances of a sort of momentary deception, but it is only children, and very simple people, utter strangers to theatrical amusements, who are apt to be so deceived: and as their case always excites the surprise and laughter of every one, it clearly proves that others are under no sort of deception.

Even Burke, notwithstanding his want of discrimination, and his monstrous hypothesis, says, "Imitated distress is never so perfect, but we can perceive it is imitation, and on that principle are somewhat pleased with it." And his case of desertion of the theatre, if it occur under any circumstances, illustrates this.

Burke adds, indeed, "But then I imagine we shall be much *mistaken* if we attribute any considerable part of our satisfaction in tragedy to the consideration that tragedy is *a deceit*, and its repre-



sentations *no realities*. [We seek no satisfaction of the kind : we know it to be a deceit throughout !] The nearer it approaches the reality, and the further it removes us from all idea of fiction, the more perfect is its power."

The nearest possible *approach* to reality is only necessary to the success of fiction, to the pleasure of imagination. He himself has said, "Imitated distress is never so perfect, but we can perceive it is imitation!" Again, therefore, here is only Burke's characteristic confusion of ideas.

My own doctrine on this subject is already obvious from the remarks made on others. We never cease to know that tragic representation is a mere deception ; our reason is never imposed upon ; our imagination is alone engaged ; we are perfectly conscious that it is so ; and we have all the sensibility, fine feeling, and generosity of pity, as well as the satisfaction of being thereby raised wonderfully in our own esteem, at the small cost of three shillings !

It is not a little curious, that this should not have been evident to those who have written so much about it. Dr. Campbell, alone, has approached it. "So great," he says, "is the anomaly which sometimes displays itself in human characters, that it is not impossible to find persons who are quickly made to cry at seeing a tragedy, or reading a romance, which they know to be fictions, and yet are both inattentive and unfeeling in respect of the actual objects of compassion who live in their neighbourhood, and are daily under their eye. . . . Men may be of a selfish, contracted, and even avaricious disposition, who are not what we should denominate hard-hearted, or unsusceptible of sympathetic feeling. Such will



gladly enjoy the luxury of pity (as Hawkesworth terms it) when it nowise interferes with their more powerful passions; that is, when it comes unaccompanied with a demand upon their pockets."—This should have led him to the simple truth, and should have prevented his framing the most confused, unintelligible, and worthless hypothesis upon this subject.



## CHAPTER VII.

### ANATOMICAL AND PHYSIOLOGICAL PRINCIPLES.

To any inquiry respecting the beauty of woman, the replies are, in general, various, inconsistent, or contradictory. The assertion might, therefore, appear to be true, that, even under the same climate, beauty is not always the same.

Our vague perceptions, however, and our vague expressions respecting beauty will be found to be, in a great measure, owing to the inaccuracy of our mode of examining it, and, in some measure, to the imperfect nomenclature which we possess for describing it.

Beauty, and even true taste, respecting it, are always the same ; but, in the first place, we observe beauty partially and imperfectly ; and in the second place, our actual preferences are dependent on our particular wants, and will be found to differ only because these wants differ in every individual, and even in the same individual at different periods of life.

The laws regulating beauty in woman, and taste respecting it in man, have not been attempted to be explained, except in the worthless work alluded to in the *Introductory Advertisement* at the beginning of this work. Yet nothing perhaps is more universally interesting.

As, in this view, the kinds of beauty demand the



first and chief attention, the following illustrations are necessary.

We observe a woman possessing one species of beauty :—Her face is generally oblong ; her neck is rather long and tapering ; her shoulders, without being angular, are sufficiently broad and definite ; her bosom is of moderate dimensions ; her waist, remarkable for fine proportion, resembles in some respects an inverted cone ; her haunches are moderately expanded ; her thighs, proportional ; her arms, as well as her limbs, are rather long and tapering ; her hands and feet are moderately small ; her complexion is often rather dark ; and her hair is frequently abundant, dark and strong. The whole figure is precise, striking and brilliant. Yet has she few or none, of the qualities of the succeeding species.

We observe, next, another species of beauty :—Her face is generally round ; her eyes are generally of the softest azure ; her neck is often rather short ; her shoulders are softly rounded, and owe any breadth they may possess rather to the expanded chest, than to the size of the shoulders themselves ; her bosom, in its luxuriance, seems laterally to protrude on the space occupied by the arms ; her waist, though sufficiently marked, is, as it were, encroached on by the embonpoint of all the contiguous parts ; her haunches are greatly expanded ; her thighs are large in proportion ; but her limbs and arms, tapering and becoming delicate, terminate in feet and hands which, compared with the ample trunk, are peculiarly small ; her complexion has the rose and lily so exquisitely blended, that we are surprised it should defy the usual operation of the elements ; and she boasts a luxuriant profusion of soft and fine flaxen or auburn hair.—The



whole figure is soft and voluptuous in the extreme. Yet has she not the almost measured proportions and the brilliant air of the preceding species ; nor has she the qualities of the succeeding one.

We observe, then, a beauty of a third species :— Her face is generally oval ; her high and pale forehead announces the intellectuality of her character ; her intensely expressive eye is full of sensibility ; in her lower features, modesty and dignity are often united ; she has not the expanded bosom, the general embonpoint, or the beautiful complexion of the second species ; and she boasts easy and graceful motion, rather than the elegant proportion of the first.—The whole figure is characterized by intellectuality and grace.

Such are the three species of beauty of which all the rest are varieties.

Now, as it is in general one only of these species which characterizes any one woman, and as each of these species is suited to the wants of, and is consequently agreeable to, a different individual, it is obvious why the common vague reports of the beauty of any woman are always so various, inconsistent, or contradictory.

In the more accurate study of this subject, it is indispensable that the reader should understand the scientific principles on which the preceding brief analysis of female beauty, as reducible to three species, is founded.

To attain this knowledge, and to acquire facility in the art of distinguishing and judging of beauty in woman, a little general knowledge of Anatomy is absolutely essential. The writer begs, therefore, attention to the following sketch. It may not at



first seem interesting to the general reader ; but it is the sole basis of a scientific knowledge of female beauty ; the study of it during one hour is sufficient to apprehend it in all its bearings ; and it will obviate every future difficulty.

In viewing the human organs in a general manner, a class of these organs at once obtrudes itself upon our notice, from its consisting of an apparatus of levers, from its performing motion from place to place or locomotion, and from these motions being of the most obvious kind.—A little more observation presents to us another class, which is distinguished from the preceding by its consisting of cylindrical tubes, by its transmitting and transmuting liquids, performing vascular action or nutrition, and by its motions being barely apparent.—Further investigation discovers a third, which differs essentially from both these, in its consisting of nervous particles, in its transmitting impressions from external objects, performing nervous action or thought, and in that action being altogether invisible.

Thus, each of these classes of organs is distinguished from another by the structure of its parts, by the purposes which it serves, and by the greater or less obviousness of its motions.

The first consists of levers ; the second, of cylindrical tubes ; and the third, of nervous particles. The first performs motion from place to place or locomotion ; the second transmits and transmutes liquids, performing vascular action or nutrition ; and the third transmits impressions from external objects, performing nervous action or thought. The motion of the first is extremely obvious ; that of the second is barely apparent ; and that of the third is altogether invisible.



Not one of them can be confounded with another ; for, considering their purposes only, it is evident that that which performs locomotion, neither transmits liquids nor sensations ; that which transmits liquids, neither performs locomotion nor is the means of sensibility ; and that which is the means of sensibility, neither performs locomotion nor transmits liquids.

Now, the organs employed in locomotion are the bones, ligaments and muscles ; those employed in transmitting liquids or in nutrition, are the absorbent, circulating and secreting vessels ; and those employed about sensations or in thought, are the organs of sense, cerebrum and cerebel, with the nerves which connect them.

The first class of organs may, therefore, be termed locomotive, or (from their very obvious action) mechanical ; the second, vascular or nutritive, or (as even vegetables, from their possessing vessels, have life) they may be termed vital ; and the third may be named nervous or thinking, or (as mind results from them) mental.

The human body, then, consists of organs of three kinds. By the first kind, locomotive or mechanical action is effected ; by the second, nutritive or vital action is maintained ; and by the third, thinking or mental action is permitted.

Anatomy is, therefore, divided into three parts, namely, that which considers the mechanical or locomotive organs ; that which considers the nutritive or vital organs ; and that which considers the thinking or mental organs.

Under the mechanical or locomotive organs are classed, first, the bones or organs of support ; second,



the ligaments or organs of articulation ; and third, the muscles or organs of motion.

Under the nutritive or vital organs are classed, first, the absorbent vessels or organs of absorption ; second, the blood-vessels, which derive their contents from the absorbed lymph, or organs of circulation ; and third, the secreting vessels, which separate various matters from the blood, or organs of secretion.

Under the thinking or mental organs are classed, first, the organs of sense, where impressions take place ; second, the cerebrum or organ of thought, properly so called, where these excite ideas, emotions and passions ; and third, the cerebel or organ of volition, where acts of the will result from the last.

<sup>1</sup>To some it may appear, that the organs and functions of digestion, respiration and generation, are not involved by this arrangement ; but such a notion can originate only in superficial observation.

Digestion is a compound function easily reducible to some of the simple ones which have been enumerated. It consists of the motion of the stomach and contiguous parts, of the secretion of a liquid from its internal surface, and of that heat, which is the common result of all action, whether mechanical, vital, or mental, and which is better explained by such motion, than by chemical theories. Similarly compounded are respiration and generation.

Thus, there is no organ nor function which is not involved by the simple and natural arrangement here sketched.

Compound, however, as the organs of digestion, respiration and generation are, yet, as they form so important a part of the system, it may be asked, with which of these classes they are most allied ? The answer is obvious. All of them consist of tubular vessels of various diameter ; and all of them transmit and transmute liquids. Possessing such strong characteristics of the nutritive or vital system, they are evidently most allied to it.

In short, digestion prepares the nutritive or vital matter, which is



We may now more particularly notice the functions of these organs, which are the subject of physiology.

In the locomotive functions, the bones at once give support, and form levers for motion; the ligaments form articulations, and affords the points of support; and the muscles are the moving powers. To the first, are owing all the symmetry and elegance of human form; to the second, its beautiful flexibility; and to the third, all the brilliance and grace of motion which fancy can inspire, or skill can execute.

In the nutritive functions, the food, having passed into the mouth, is, after mastication, aided by mixture with the saliva, thrown back, by the tongue and contiguous parts, into the cavity behind, called fauces and pharynx; this contracting, presses it into the

taken up by absorption—the first of the simple nutritive functions; respiration renovates it in the very middle of its course—between the two portions of the simple function of circulation; and generation, dependent on secretion—the last of these functions, communicates this nutritive matter, or propagates vitality to a new series of beings. In such arrangement, the digestive organs, therefore, precede, and the generative follow, the simple nutritive organs; while the respiratory occupy a middle place between the venous and the arterial circulation.

Nothing can be more improper, as the preceding observations show, than considering any one of these as a distinct class.

More fully, therefore, to enumerate the nutritive or vital organs, we may say, that, under them are classed, first, the organs of digestion, the external and internal absorbent surfaces, and the vessels which absorb from these surfaces, or the organs of absorption; second, the heart, lungs and blood-vessels, which derive their contents (the blood) from the absorbed lymph, or the organs of circulation; and third, the secreting cavities, glands, etc., which separate various matters from the blood, or the organs of secretion, and of which generation is the sequel.



œsophagus or gullet ; this also contracting, propels it into the stomach, which, after its due digestion aided by the gastric juice, similarly contracting, transmits whatever portion of it, now called chyme, is sufficiently comminuted to pass through its lower opening, the pylorus, into the intestines ; these, at the commencement of which it receives the bile and pancreatic juice, similarly pressing it on all sides, urge forward its most solid part to the anus ; while its liquid portion partly escapes from the pressure into the mouths of the absorbents. The absorbents arising by minute openings from all the internal surfaces, and continuing a similar contractile motion, transmit it, now called chyle, by all their gradually enlarging branches, and through their general trunk, the thoracic duct, where it is blended with the lymph brought from other parts, into the great veins contiguous to the heart, where it is mixed with the venous or returning and dark-coloured blood, and whence it flows into the anterior side of that organ. The anterior side of the heart, forcibly repeating this contraction, propels it, commixed with the venous blood, into the lungs, which perform the office of respiration, and in some measure of sanguification ; there, giving off carbonaceous matter, and assuming a vermilion hue and new vivifying properties, it flows back as arterial blood, into the posterior side of the heart, still similarly contracting, discharges it into the arteries ; these, maintaining a like contraction, carry it over all the system ; and a great portion of it, impregnated with carbon, and of a dark colour, returns through the veins in order to undergo the same course. Much, however, of its gelatinous and fibrous parts is retained in the cells of the parenchyma, or cellular, vascular



and nervous substance forming the basis of the whole fabric, and constitutes nutrition, properly so called ; while other portions of it become entangled in the peculiarly formed labyrinths of the glands, and form secretion and excretion—the products of the former contributing to the exercise of other functions, and those of the latter being rejected. As digestion precedes the first, so generation follows the last of these functions, and not only continues the same species of action, but propagates it widely to new existences in the manner just described.

In the thinking functions, the organs of sense receive external impressions, which excite in them sensations ; the cerebrum, having these transmitted to it, performs the more complicated functions of mental operation, whence result ideas, emotions and passions ; and the cerebel, being similarly influenced, performs the function of volition, or causes the acts of the will.

It is not unusual to consider the body as being divided into the head, the trunk and the extremities ; but, in consequence of the hitherto universal neglect of the natural arrangement of the organs and functions into locomotive, nutritive, and thinking, the beauty and interest which may be attached to this division, have equally escaped the notice of anatomists.

It is a curious fact, and strongly confirmative of the preceding arrangements, that one of these parts—the extremities, consists almost entirely of locomotive organs, namely, of bones, ligaments and muscles ; that another—the trunk, consists of all the greater nutritive organs, namely, absorbents, blood-vessels and glands ; and that the third—the



head, contains all the thinking organs, namely, the organs of sense, cerebrum and cerebel.<sup>1</sup>

It is a fact not less curious, nor less confirmative of the preceding arrangements, that, of these parts, those which consist chiefly of locomotive or mechanical organs—organs which, as to mere structure, and considered apart from the influence of the nervous system over them, are common to us with the lowest class of beings, namely, minerals,<sup>2</sup> are placed in the lowest situation, namely, the extremities ; that which consists chiefly of nutritive or vital organs—organs common to us with a higher class of beings, namely, vegetables,<sup>3</sup> is placed in a higher situation, namely, the trunk ; and that which consists chiefly of thinking or mental organs—organs peculiar to the highest class of beings, namely, animals,<sup>4</sup> is placed in the highest situation, namely, the head.

It is not less remarkable, that this analogy is supported even in its minutest details ; for, to choose the nutritive organs contained in the trunk, as an illustration, it is a fact, that those of absorption and secretion, which are most common to us with plants

<sup>1</sup> In perfect consistency with the assertion, that, though the organs of digestion, respiration, and generation, were really compound, still they were chiefly nutritive or vital, and properly belonged to that class, it is not less remarkable, that in this division of the body, they are found to occupy that part—the trunk, in which the chief simple nutritive organs are contained. This also shows the impropriety of reckoning any of these a separate system from the vital.

<sup>2</sup> The bones resemble these, in containing the greatest quantity of earthy mineral matter.

<sup>3</sup> It is the possession of vessels which constitutes the vitality of vegetables.

<sup>4</sup> In animals, alone, is nervous matter discoverable.



—a lower class of beings, have a lower situation—in the cavity of the abdomen; while those of circulation, which are very imperfect in plants,<sup>1</sup> and more peculiar to animals—a higher class of beings, hold a higher situation—in the cavity of the thorax.

It is, moreover, worthy of remark, and still illustrative of the preceding arrangements, that, in each of these three situations, the bones differ both in position and in form. In the extremities, they are situated internally to the soft parts, and are generally of cylindrical form; in the trunk, they begin to assume a more external situation and a flatter form, because they protect nutritive and more important parts, which they do not, however, altogether cover; and, in the head, they obtain the most external situation and the flattest form, especially in its highest part, because they protect thinking and most important organs, which, in some parts, they completely invest.

The loss of such general views is the consequence of arbitrary methods.<sup>2</sup>

We may now apply these anatomical and physiological views to the art of distinguishing and judging of beauty in woman.

<sup>1</sup> Plants have no real circulation, nor passage of their nutritive liquids through the same point.

<sup>2</sup> This arrangement of Anatomy and Physiology was first published by me in 1806; and, notwithstanding its being the arrangement of nature, it has not been adopted by any one that I know of, until very lately, when it was in some measure used by Dr. Roget, without acknowledgment.

The originality, as well as the truth and value, of this arrangement, will be illustrated by referring to any other published previous to 1806, or even to 1808, when I republished it in "Preliminary Lectures," Edinburgh.



It is evidently the locomotive or mechanical system which is highly developed in the beauty whose figure is precise, striking, and brilliant.

It is evidently the nutritive or vital system which is highly developed in the beauty whose figure is soft and voluptuous.

It is not less evidently the thinking or mental system which is highly developed in the beauty whose figure is characterized by intellectuality and grace.

Thus can anatomical principles alone at once illustrate and establish the accuracy of the three species of beauty which I have analytically described.



## CHAPTER VIII.

### OF THE AGES OF WOMAN IN RELATION TO BEAUTY.

THE variations of the organization of woman do not distinctly mark the seasons of life. Many connected phenomena glide on imperceptibly; and we can distinguish the strong characters of different and distinct ages, only at periods remote from each other. Although, therefore, woman is perpetually changing, it requires some care to discriminate the principal epochs of her life.

The first age of woman extends from birth to the period of puberty.

In beginning the career of life, woman is not yet truly woman; the characters of her sex are not yet decided; she is an equivocal being, who does not differ from the male of the same age even by the delicacy of the organs; and we observe between them a perfect identity of wants, functions, and movements. Their existence is then purely individual; we perceive none of the relations which afterwards establish between them a mutual dependence; each lives only for self.

This conformity and independence of the sexes are the more remarkable, the earlier the age and the less advanced the development.



Confining our view to woman alone, it is not only in dimensions that, at this age, her person differs from that in which the growth is terminated: it presents another model. The various parts have not, in relation to each other, the same proportions.

The head is much more voluminous; and this is not a result of the extent of the face, for that is small and contracted, because the apparatus of smell and of mastication are not yet developed. Nor is the head only more voluminous: it is also more active, and forms a centre toward which is directed all the effort of life.

The spine of the back has not either the minuter prominences or the general inflexions which favour the action of the extensor muscles, a circumstance which is opposed to standing perpendicularly during the first months. The infant consequently can only crawl like a quadruped.

Little distinction can then be drawn, and that with difficulty, from the comparative width of the haunches, and magnitude of the pelvis. That part is scarcely more developed in the female than in the male; its general form is the same; and its different diameters have similar relations to each other.

The length of the trunk is great in proportion to the limbs, which are slightly and imperfectly developed.

Owing to the great length of the chest, and the imperfection of the inferior members, the middle of the body then corresponds to the region of the umbilicus. An infant having other proportions, would appear to be deprived of the characters of its age.

In the locomotive system, the muscles have not yet acted with sufficient power and frequency to



modify the direction of the bones, and to bestow a peculiar character upon their combination in the skeleton. The fleshy and other soft parts do not yet appear to differ from those of the male, either as to form or as to relative volume.

The vital functions of digestion, of circulation, and respiration, of nutrition, secretion, and excretion, are performed in the same manner. The want of nourishment is unceasingly renewed, and the movements of the pulse, and of inspiration and expiration, are rapidly performed, owing to the extreme irritability of all the organs.

The mental functions present the same resemblance; the ideas, the appetites, the passions, have the greatest analogy; and similar moral dispositions prevail. Little girls, it has been observed, have in some measure the petulance of little boys, and these have in some measure the mobility and the inconstancy of little girls.

Owing to the pelvis not being yet developed, little girls walk nearly like children of the other sex.

These points of resemblance do not continue during a long period; the female begins to acquire a distinct physiognomy, and traits which are peculiar to her long before we can discern any of the symptoms of puberty; and although the especial marks which distinguish her sex do not yet show themselves, the general forms which characterize it may be perceived. These differences, however, are only slight modifications, more easily felt than determined.

The cartilaginous extremities of the bones appear to enlarge; and the mucous substance, which ultimately gives the soft reliefs which distinguish woman, is not yet secreted. She is now, perhaps, more



easily distinguished by the nature of her inclinations and the general character of her mind : while man now seeks to make use of his strength, woman endeavours to acquire agreeable arts. The movements, the gait, of the little girl begin to change.

These shades are so much the more sensible as the development is more advanced. Still, woman, in advancing towards puberty, appears to remove less than man from her primitive constitution ; she always preserves something of the character proper to children ; and the texture of her organs never loses all its original softness.

At the near approach to puberty, woman becomes daily more perfect.

We observe a predominance of the action of the lungs and the arteries ; the pelvis enlarges ; the haunches are rounded ; and the figure acquires elegance.

There is in particular a remarkable increase of the capacity of the pelvis, of which the circumference at last presents the circular form ; it being no longer, as in the little girl and in man, the antero-posterior diameter, which is the greatest, but the transverse one. It has been observed that the same occurs in the females of the greater quadrupeds. The pelvis, however, does not acquire, till the moment of perfect puberty, its proper form and dimensions.

The changes which the same cause produces at the surface, are a general development of the cellular tissue, the delicacy of all the outlines, the fineness and the animation of the skin, and the new state of the bosom.

The fire of the eyes, and the altogether new expression of the physiognomy, show that there now







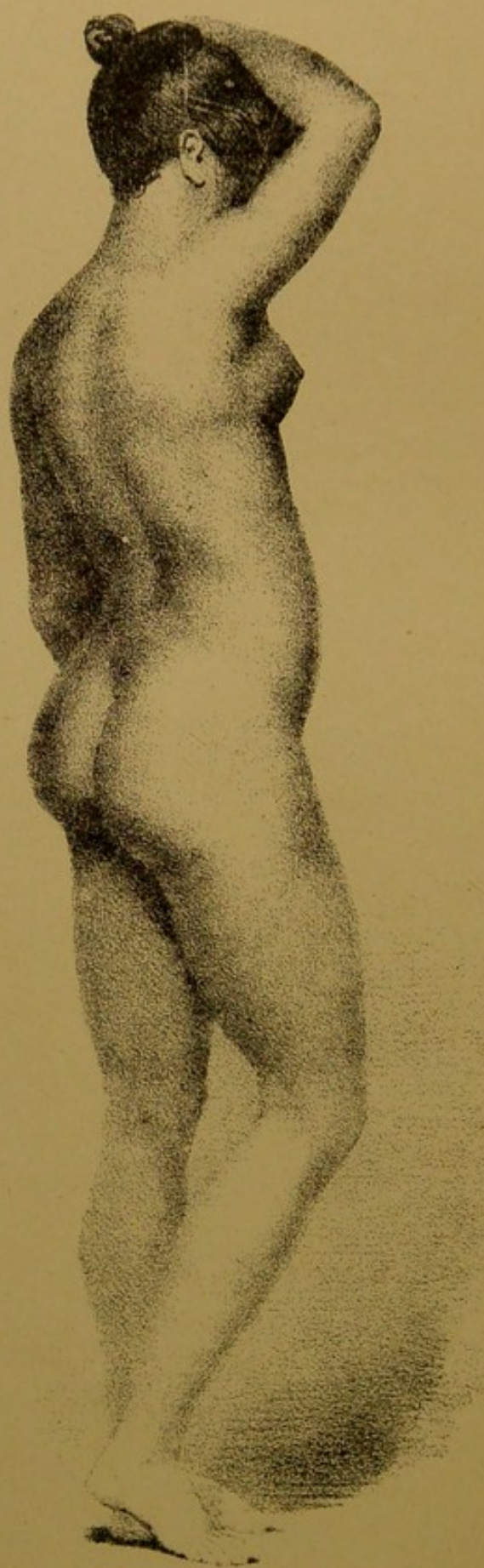


PLATE I.



also exists the sensation of a new want, which various circumstances may for a time enfeeble or silence, but can never entirely stifle; and with it come those tastes, that direction of the mind, and those habits which are the effect of an internal power now called into activity.

The gait and bearing of woman is now no longer the same; and the voice changes as well as the physiognomy.

In all that has yet occurred, it will be observed that nutrition and growth take place with great rapidity in woman. Her internal structure, her external form, her faculties, are all developed promptly. It would appear that the parts which compose her body, being less, less compact, and less strong than those of man, require less time to attain their complete development.

Woman consequently arrives earlier at the age of puberty, and her body is commonly, at twenty years of age, as completely formed as that of man at thirty. Thus beauty and grace, as has been observed, seem to demand of nature less labour and time than the attributes of force and grandeur.

In many women, however, nutrition languishes even until the sexual organs enter into action, and determine a revolution under the influence of which growth is accomplished.

Still it is certain that, for several years, the locomotive system predominates in young women, even in figures promising the ultimate development of the vital system in the highest degree.—See Plate I., in which it is very obvious; and Plate II., in which it is still apparent enough.

The second age of woman extends from puberty



to the cessation of the menses, or, we may say, from the period of full growth, the general time of bearing children, to the time of ceasing to bear—generally perhaps from twenty to forty.

It is at the beginning of this period that woman has acquired all her attributes, her most seducing graces. She is not now distinguished merely by the organs which are the direct instruments of reproduction: many other differences of structure, having a relation to her part in life, present themselves to our view.

At this maturer age, the whole figure is, in the female, smaller and slenderer than in the male. The ancients accordingly gave seven heads and a half to the Venus, and eight heads and some modules to the Apollo.

The relations between the dimensions of the different parts differ also in the two sexes.

In woman, the head, shoulders, and chest, are small and compact, whilst the haunches, the hips, the thighs, and the parts connected with the abdomen are ample and large. Hence, her body tapers upward, as her limbs taper downward. And this is the most remarkable circumstance in her general form.

Owing to smaller stature, and to greater size of the abdominal region, the middle point which is at the pubis in the male, is situated higher in the female. This is the next remarkable circumstance in a general view.

The inferior members still continue shorter.

In general, woman is not only less in stature, and different in her general proportions, but her haunches are more apart, her hips more elevated, her abdomen larger, her members more rounded, her









PLATE II.



soft parts less compact, her forms more softened, her traits finer.

During youth, especially, and among civilized nations, woman is further distinguished by the softness, the smoothness, the delicacy and the polish of all the forms, by the gradual and easy transitions between all the parts, by the number and the harmony of the undulating lines which these present in every view, by the beautiful outline of the reliefs, and by the fineness and the animation of the skin.

The soft parts which enter into the composition of woman, and the cellular tissue which serves to unite them, are also more delicate, and more supple than those of man.

All these circumstances indicate very clearly the passive state to which nature has destined woman, and which will be fully illustrated in a future volume.

If, in a living body, any part liable to be distended had too much firmness, or even elasticity, it might press against some essential organ; and the liquids being impeded in their course, would in that case be speedily altered, if the neighbouring parts offered not flexible vessels for their reception.

Now, in the body of woman, certain parts are exposed to suffer great distentions and compressions. It is therefore necessary that her organs should be of such structure as to yield readily to these impressions, and to supply each other when their respective functions are impeded.

From this it follows, that woman never enjoys existence better, than when a moderate plumpness bestows on her organs, without too much weakening them, all the suppleness of which they are capable.



This leads to the consideration of the natural mobility of the organs of woman.

Their mobility is a necessary consequence, in the first place, of their littleness. The movements of all animals appear to be executed with more rapidity, the less their bulk. It has been observed, that the arteries of the ox beat only thirty-five times, whilst those of the sheep beat sixty, and that the pulse of women is smaller and more rapid than that of men.

A second physical quality, which concurs to render more mobile the various parts of woman, is their softness.

A certain feebleness is the necessary consequence of these two circumstances. But it is thence that spring woman's suppleness and lightness of movement, and her capacity for grace of attitude.

It has been conjectured, that even the elements of the parts which constitute woman, have a particular organization, on which depends the elegance of the forms, the vivacity of the sensations, and the lightness of the movements which characterize her.

The result of these circumstances is that, while man possesses force and majesty, woman is distinguished by beauty and grace. The characteristics of woman are less imposing and more amiable; they inspire less admiration than love. As has been observed, a single trait of rudeness, a severe air, or even the character of majesty would injure the effect of womanly beauty. Lucien admirably represents to us the god of Love frightened at the masculine air of Minerva.

While man, by force and activity, surmounts the obstacles which embarrass him, woman, by yielding,



withdraws from their action, and adds to beauty a gentle and winning grace which places all the vaunted power of man at her disposal.

It is evidently the influence of the organs distinguishing the two sexes, which is the primary cause of their peculiar beauty.

As a liquid which, in man, is secreted in certain vessels for the purpose of reproduction, communicates a general excitement and activity to the character, so when, in woman, the periodical excretion appears, the breasts expand, the eyes sparkle, the countenance becomes more expressive, but at the same time more timid and reserved, and a character of flexibility and grace distinguishes every motion.

Conformably with this view, the appearance and the manners of eunuchs approach to those of women, by the softness and feebleness of their organization, as well as by their timidity, and by their acute voice.

The very opposite is naturally the result of the extirpation of the ovaries in women. Pott, giving an account of the case of a female, in whom both the ovaries were extirpated, says, the person "has become thinner, and more apparently muscular; her breasts, which were large, are gone; nor has she ever menstruated since the operation, which is now some years." Haighton found that, by dividing the Fallopian tubes, which connect the ovaries with the womb, sexual feelings were destroyed, and the ovaries gradually wasted.

The women, also, in whom the uterus and the ovaries remain inert during life, approximate in forms and habits to men. It is stated, in the *Philosophical Transactions* for 1805, that an adult female, in whom



the ovaries were defective, presented a corresponding defect in the state of the constitution.

To the same general principle, it has been observed, we must refer the partial growth of a beard on females in the decline of life, and the circumstance that female birds, when they have ceased to lay eggs, occasionally assume the plumage, and, to a certain extent, the other characters of the male.

Under the influence of this cause, the first exercise of her new faculty determines remarkable modifications in woman. Her neck swells and augments in size—

“ Non illam nutrix orienti luce revisens  
Hesterno collum poterit circumdare filo ; ” <sup>1</sup>

her voice assumes another expression; her moral habits totally change; and many women owe to love and marriage more splendid beauty.

The women thus happily constituted are not those of hot climates, but those of cooler regions and calmer temperament, whose placid features and more elastic forms announce a gentler and more passive love.

Impassioned women, on the contrary, do not so long preserve their freshness: the expansive force, from which the organs derived their form and

<sup>1</sup> The cause of this has never been explained; and it could not well be explained, without a perception of the views in my preceding physiological arrangement.—The brain, at this period, becomes more subservient to purposes connected with generation; the communication between the trunk and the head is more frequent, intense and sustained; and the neck, which contains the communicating organs, necessarily increases in size. This unexplained circumstance led to the mistake of the craniologists respecting the cerebel. Here, therefore, as in other cases pointed out in my work on *PHYSIOGNOMY*, Gall and Spurzheim ascribe to deeper seated organs what belongs to more superficial ones.



colouring, abates; and a less agreeable flaccidity succeeds to the elasticity with which they were endowed, if the plumpness which adult age commonly brings does not sustain them.

During pregnancy and suckling, the first mentioned class of women retain a remarkable freshness and plumpness.

The last mentioned class of women most frequently become meagre, and lose their freshness during the continuance of these states.

If, however, during these states, suitable precautions and preservative cares be not employed, it is the first class who most suffer from traces of maternity.

Conception, pregnancy, delivery, and suckling, being renewed more or less frequently during the second age, hasten debility in feeble and ill-constituted women; especially if misery or an improper mode of life increase the influence of these causes.

It is unnecessary to give here any drawings to illustrate woman during her second age. That is done by the plates in the sequel: it is their principal object.

In the third age of woman, extending generally from forty to sixty, the physical form does not suddenly deteriorate; and, as has often been observed, "when premature infirmities or misfortunes, the exercise of an unfavourable profession, or a wrong employment of life, have not hastened old age, women during the third age preserve many of the charms of the preceding one."

At this period, in well-constituted women, the fat, being absorbed with less activity, is accumulated in the cellular tissue under the skin and elsewhere; and this effaces any wrinkles which might have begun to



furrow the skin, rounds the outlines anew, and again restores an air of youth and freshness. Hence this period is called "the age of return."—See Plate III.

This plumpness, though juvenile lightness and freshness be wanting, sustains the forms, and sometimes confers a majestic air, which, in women otherwise favourably organized, still interests for a number of years.

The shape certainly is no longer so elegant; the articulations have less elasticity; the muscles are more feeble; the movements are less light; and in plump women we observe those broken motions, and in meagre ones that stiffness, which mark the walk or the dance at that age.

At this period occurs a remarkable alteration in the organs of voice. Women, therefore, to whom singing is a profession, ought to limit its exercise.

When women pass happily from the third to the fourth age, their constitution, as every one must have observed, changes entirely; it becomes stronger; and nature abandons to individual life all the rest of existence.

Beauty, however, is no more; form and shape have disappeared; the plumpness which supported the reliefs has abandoned them; sinkings and wrinkles are multiplied; the skin has lost its polish; colour and freshness have fled for ever.

These injuries of time, it has been observed, commonly begin by the abdomen, which loses its polish and its firmness; the hemispheres of the bosom no longer sustain themselves; the clavicles project; the neck becomes meagre; all the reliefs are effaced; all forms are altered from roundness and softness to angularity and hardness.—See Plate IV.





PLATE III.













PLATE IV.



That which, amidst these ruins, still survives for a long time, is the entireness of the hair, the placidity or the fineness of the look, the air of sentiment, the amiable expression of the countenance, and, in women of elegant mind and great accomplishments, caressing manners and charming graces, which almost make us forget youth and beauty.

Finally, and especially in muscular or nervous women, the temperament changes, and the constitution of woman approaches to that of man; the organs become rigid; and, in some unhappy cases, a beard protrudes.

Old age and decrepitude finally succeed.



## CHAPTER IX.

### OF THE CAUSES OF BEAUTY IN WOMAN.

THE crossing of races is often spoken of as a means of perfecting the form of man, and of developing beauty ; and we are told that it is in this manner that the Persians have become a beautiful people, and that many tribes of Tartar origin have been improved, especially the Turks, who now present to us scarcely anything of the Mongol.

In these general and vague statements, however, the mere crossing of different races is always deemed sufficient ; whereas every improvement depends on the circumstance that the organization of the races subjected to this operation are duly suited to each other. It is in that way only, that we can explain the following facts stated by Moreau.

In one of the great towns of the north of France, the women, half a century ago, were rather ugly than pretty ; but a detachment of the guards being quartered there, and remaining during several years, the population changed in appearance, and, favoured by this circumstance, the town is now indebted to strangers for the beauty of the most interesting portion of its inhabitants.

The monks of Citeaux exercised an influence no



less remarkable upon the beauty of the inhabitants of the country around their monastery; and it may be stated, as the result of actual observation, that the young female peasants of their neighbourhood were much more beautiful than those of other cantons. And, adds this writer, "there can be no doubt that the same effect occurred in the different places whither religious houses attracted foreign inmates, whom love and pleasure speedily united with the indigenous inhabitants!"

The other circumstances which contribute to female beauty are, a mild climate, a fertile soil, a generous but temperate diet, a regular mode of life, favourable education, the guidance and suppression of passions, easy manners, good moral, social, and political institutions, and occupations which do not injure the beautiful proportions of the body.

Beauty, accordingly, is more especially to be found in certain countries. Thus, as has often been observed, the sanguine temperament is that of the nations of the north; the phlegmatic is that of cold and moist countries; and the bilious is that of the greater part of the inhabitants of southern regions. Each of these has its degree and modification of beauty.

The native country of beauty is not to be found either in regions where cold freezes up the living juices, or in those where the animal structure is withered by heat. A climate removed from the excessive influence of both these causes constitutes an essential condition in the production of beauty; and this, with its effect, we find between the 35th and 65th degree of northern latitude, in Persia, the countries bordering upon Caucasus, and principally



Tchercassia, Georgia, and Mingrelia, Turkey in Europe and Asia, Greece, Italy, some part of Spain, a very small part of France, England, Holland, some parts of Germany, Poland, Denmark, Sweden, and a part of Norway and even of Russia.

Even under the same degree of latitude, it is observed that the position of the place, its elevation, its vicinity to the sea, the direction of the winds, the nature of the soil, and all the peculiarities of locality which constitute the climate proper to each place, occasion great differences in beauty.

In relation to the causes of beauty, some observations, which seem to me important, arise out of the remarks of De Pauw on the Greeks.

De Pauw endeavoured to show, that though the men of ancient Greece were handsome, the women of that country were never beautiful. He thence accounted for the excessive admiration which there prevailed of courtezans from Ionia, etc.

This, however, was so contrary to the notions formed of the beauty of that people from what was known of their taste, that it was considered as a paradox. Travellers, accordingly, sought for such beauty in the women of modern Greece. They were disappointed in not finding it.

What rendered this the more remarkable was, that in various places they found the ancient and beautiful cast of countenance among the men, and not among the women of that country—thus corroborating in all respects the doctrine of De Pauw.

On considering that doctrine, however, and comparing it with more extended observations, it would seem to be only a particular application of a more general law unknown to De Pauw,—that, in most



countries, one of the sexes excels the other in beauty. Thus, in some parts of the highlands of Scotland, we find the men as remarkable for beauty as the women for ugliness; while, in some eastern counties of England, we find precisely the reverse. The strong features, the dark curled hair, and the muscular form of the highlander, are as unsuitable to the female sex, as the soft features, the flaxen hair, and the short and tapering limbs of the woman of the eastern coast, are unsuitable to the male.

If the soil, climate, and productions of these countries be considered, we discover the causes of the differences alluded to. The hardships of mountain life are favourable to the stronger development of the locomotive system, which ought more or less to characterize the male; and the luxuriance of the plains is favourable to those developments of the nutritive system, which ought to characterize the female.

This is illustrated even in inferior animals. Oxen become large bodied and fat in low and rich soils, but are remarkable for shortness of legs; while, in higher and dryer situations, the bulk of the body is less, and the limbs are stronger and more muscular.

The quantity and quality of the aliments is another cause, not less powerful in regard to beauty. Abundance, or rather a proper mediocrity, as to nutritious food, contributes to perfection in this respect.

Beauty is also, in some measure, a result of civilization. Women, accordingly, of consummate beauty are found only in civilized nations.

Professions can rarely be said to favour beauty; but they do not impede its development when their exercise does not compel to laborious employments an organization suited only to sedentary occupations.



## CHAPTER X.

### OF THE STANDARD OF BEAUTY IN WOMAN.

THE ideas of the beautiful vary in different individuals, and in different nations. Hence many men of talent have thought them altogether relative and arbitrary.

“Ask,” says Voltaire, “a Negro of Guinea [what is beauty]: the beautiful is for him a black oily skin, deep-seated eyes, and a broad flat nose.”

“Perfect beauty,” says Payne Knight, “taking perfect in its most strict, and beauty in its most comprehensive signification, ought to be equally pleasing to all; but of this, instances are scarcely to be found: for, as to taking them, or, indeed, any examples for illustration, from the other sex of our own species, it is extremely fallacious; as there can be little doubt that all male animals think the females of their own species the most beautiful productions of nature. At least we know this to be the case among the different varieties of men, whose respective ideas of the beauty of their females are as widely different as those of man, and any other animal, can be. The sable Africans view with pity and contempt the marked deformity of the Europeans; whose mouths are compressed, their noses pinched, their cheeks shrunk, their hair



rendered lank and flimsy, their bodies lengthened and emaciated, and their skins unnaturally bleached by shade and seclusion, and the baneful influence of a cold humid climate. . . . Who shall decide which party is right, or which is wrong; or whether the black or white model be, according to the laws of nature, the most perfect specimen of a perfect woman? . . . The sexual desires of brutes are probably more strictly natural inclinations, and less changed or modified by the influence of acquired ideas, or social habits, than those of any race of mankind; but their desires seem, in general, to be excited by smell, rather than by sight or contact. If, however, a boar can think a sow the sweetest and most lovely of living creatures, we can have no difficulty in believing that he also thinks her the most beautiful.

“Among the various reasons,” says Reynolds, “why we prefer one part of nature’s works to another, the most general, I believe, is habit and custom; custom makes, in a certain sense, white black, and black white; it is custom alone determines our preference of the colour of the Europeans to the Ethiopians, and they, for the same reason, prefer their own colour to ours. I suppose nobody will doubt, if one of their painters were to paint the goddess of Beauty, but that he would represent her black, with thick lips, flat nose, and woolly hair; and it seems to me, he would act very unnaturally if he did not; for by what criterion will any one dispute the propriety of his idea? We indeed say, that the form and colour of the European is preferable to that of the Ethiopian; but I know of no other reason we have for it, but that we are more accustomed to it.”



The coquetry of several tribes, it has been observed, leads them to mutilate and disfigure themselves, to flatten their forehead, to enlarge their mouth and ears, to blacken their skin, and cover it with the marks of suffering.—We make ugliness in that way, says Montaigne.

But, to confine our observations to individual nations, and these civilized ones; we every day see irregular or even common figures, preferred to those which the enlightened judge deems beautiful.

How, then, it is asked, amidst these different tastes, these opposite opinions, are we to admit ideas of absolute beauty?

These are the strongest objections against all ideas of absolute and essential beauty in woman.

To establish, in opposition to these objections, a standard of womanly beauty, equal talent has been employed; but the reasoning, though sufficient for such objections, has been rather of a vague description. As, however, the subject is of great importance, I shall endeavour to abridge and concentrate the arguments of which it consists, before I point out the surer method which is founded on the Elements of Beauty already established.

To refute these objections, it has been thought sufficient to examine the chief conditions which are necessary, in order to appreciate properly the impression of those combinations, which woman presents, and to expose the principal circumstances which are opposed to the accuracy of opinions, and judgments respecting them.

The conditions necessary to enable us to pronounce respecting the real attributes of beauty, are, first, a temperate climate, under which nature brings to per-



fection all her productions, and gives to their forms and functions generally, and to those of man in particular, all the development of which they are capable, without excess in the action of some, and defect in that of others ;—secondly, in man in particular, a brain capable of vigorous thought, sound judgment, and exquisite taste ;—and thirdly, a very advanced civilization, without which these faculties cannot be duly exercised or attain any perfection.

It is evident enough that none of these conditions are to be met with in the whimsical judgments and tastes of many nations.

The consequence of the absence of these conditions, in relation to the uncivilized and ignorant inhabitants of hot climates, is marked in their deeming characteristics of beauty, the thick lips of Negresses, the long and pendant mammæ of the woman in several nations both of Africa and America, or the gross forms of those of Egypt.

The consequence of the absence of these conditions, in relation to the uncivilized and ignorant inhabitants of cold climates, is equally marked in their deeming characteristics of beauty, the short figures of the women of icy regions, in which, deprived of the vivifying action of heat and light, living beings appear only in a state of deformity and alteration ; and in their similarly deeming beautiful the obliquely placed eyes of the Chinese and Japanese, and the crushed nose of the Calmucs, etc., etc.

Those who take these views, which are true, though somewhat vague and inconclusive, should, I think, have seen and added, that the deviations from beauty in the forms of the women of hot climates are commonly in *excess*, owing to the great development of



organs of sense or of sex ; while the deviations from beauty, in the forms of the women of cold climates, are commonly in *defect*, owing to the imperfect development of organs of sense, and of the general figure.

This view renders it more clear that both these kinds of deviation are deformities, incompatible with the consistent and harmonious development of the whole. And without this view, the preceding arguments are indeed too vague to be easily tenable.

In relation more especially to the second of the preceding conditions, the possession of a brain capable of vigorous thought, sound judgment, and exquisite taste, Hume observes that the same excellence of faculties which contributes to the improvement of reason, the same clearness of conception, the same exactness of distinction, the same vivacity of apprehension, are essential to the operations of true taste.

Here again, those who take these true, but vague and inconclusive views, should, I think, have seen and added that this excellence of the thinking faculties is incompatible with the obviously constricted brain, which is a defect common both to the Negro and the Mongol—a *defect* which is incompatible with beauty either of form or function, and which I have shown, in my work on *PHYSIOGNOMY*, to be intimately connected with climate. This renders the argument sufficiently strong.

Those who employ these arguments as to a standard of beauty in woman, proceed to show the modes in which defects of this kind unfit persons to judge of beauty ; and though their further arguments are similarly vague, they nevertheless tend to support the truth.



If, say they, amongst the forms and the features which we compare, some are associated by us with certain qualities or sentiments which please us, they equally lead us to a predilection or prejudice, in consequence of which the most common or the least beautiful figure is preferred to the most perfect. In this case, the imagination has perverted the judgment.

Winckelmann truly observes, that young people are most exposed to such errors: placed under the influence of sentiment and of illusion, they often regard, as very beautiful, women who have nothing capable of charming, but an animated physiognomy, in which breathe desire, voluptuousness, and languor.<sup>1</sup> The results of this as to life may easily be foreseen.

Of the excess to which such prejudice may go, a good instance is adduced in Descartes, who preferred women who squinted to the most perfect beauties, because squinting was one of the most remarkable features of the woman who was the first object of his affections.

Winckelmann observes, that even artists themselves have not always an exquisite sentiment of beauty: their first impressions have often an influence which they cannot overcome, nor even weaken, especially when, at a distance from the

<sup>1</sup> "Ad un giovane, in cui ferve l' amor del piacere, sembra una dea colei, che senza essere veramente bella, pur ha nel volto un non so che di vizzo languido, e di vivace che alletta; laddove mirerà egli con indifferenza una bella donna che ne' gesti e nel contegno spiri modestia, ancorchè abbia per avventura le sublimi forme e la maestà d' una Giunone."—*Storia delle Arti del Disegno*



admirable productions of the ancients, they cannot rectify their first judgments.<sup>1</sup>

Circumstances of profession, it is truly observed, may also lead to associations of ideas capable of deceiving us in our opinions respecting beauty. Men are apt to refer everything to their exclusive knowledge and the mode of judging which it employs. The "what does that prove" of the mathematician, when judging the finest products of imagination, has passed into a proverb. And every one knows of that other cultivator of the same science, who declared that he never could discover anything sublime in Milton's *Paradise Lost*, but that he could never read the queries at the end of one of the books in Newton's *Optics* without his hair standing on end and his blood running cold.

The necessity of the third condition, namely, advanced civilization, to a right judgment respecting a standard of beauty in woman, is evident, when we consider that it requires a taste formed by the habit of bringing things together, and of comparing them.

"One accustomed to see," says Hume, "and examine, and weigh the several performances, admired in different ages and nations, can alone rate the merits of a work exhibited to his view, and assign its proper rank among the productions of genius."

From all this, it is certainly evident, not merely

<sup>1</sup> "Sovente molti degli artisti formansi l'idea del bello sulle prime informi impressioni che ricevono, e ben di rado avviene che l'osservazione di un bello più sublime e più perfetto la indebolisca, o la cancelli dalla fantasia loro, principalmente ov'essi, lontani dai bei monumenti dell' antichità, non possano riformare, direm così, l'immaginazione, e correggere lo spirito."—*Ibid.*



that that which pleases us is not always beautiful; that numerous causes may form so many sources of diversity and of error on this subject; and that we cannot thence conclude that the ideas of beauty are relative and arbitrary: but that certain conditions are indispensable to form the judgment respecting beauty; and that the principal of these conditions are a temperate climate and fertile soil, a well developed brain, sound judgment and delicate taste, and a highly advanced civilization.

This is perfectly conformable with the practical fact that it was under a most delightful climate, among a people of unrivalled judgment, genius, and taste, and amidst a civilization which the world has never since witnessed, that the laws of nature as to beauty were discovered, and applied to the production of those immortal forms which the unfavourable accidents occurring to the existence of all beings have never permitted nature herself to combine in any one individual.

Though I have endeavoured to amend these arguments respecting a standard of beauty in woman, I prefer those which may be founded on the doctrine I have laid down respecting the Elements of Beauty. It will be found that the greatest number of these elements are combined in the woman whom we commonly deem the most beautiful.

To illustrate this, it will be sufficient to examine their most striking and distinctive characteristic—namely, their fair complexion, which is intimately connected with all their other characteristics, and which gives increased splendour and effect to their form and features.

It is remarkable that even Alison, though the advo-



cate of all beauty being dependent on association, grants that the pure white of the countenance is expressive to us, according to its different degrees, of purity, fineness, gaiety; that the dark complexion, on the other hand, is expressive to us of melancholy, gloom, or sadness; and that so far is this from being a fanciful relation, that it is generally admitted by those who have the best opportunities of ascertaining it, the professors of medical science. He also observes that black eyes are commonly united with the dark, and blue eyes, with the fair complexion: and that in the colour of the eyes, blue, according to its different degrees, is expressive of softness, gentleness, cheerfulness, or severity; and black, of thought, or gravity, or of sadness.

Even this, however, is less conclusive than the pathological or physiological facts stated by Cheselden, as to the boy restored by him to sight, namely, that the first view of a black object gave him great pain, and that that of a negro woman struck him with horror.

Independently of this, white, as every one is aware, is the colour which reflects the greatest number of luminous rays; and, for that reason, it bestows the brilliance and splendour upon beautiful forms with which all are charmed.

Winckelmann, indeed, observes that the head of Scipio the elder, in the Palazzo Rospigliosi, executed in basalt of a deep green, is very beautiful.<sup>1</sup> But, in

<sup>1</sup> "La bella testa muliebre di basalte verdognolo esistente nella villa Albani non potrebbe esser più bella se fosse scolpita in marmo bianco; quella di Scipione il seniore di basalte ancor più cupo esistente nel palazzo Rospigliosi supera in bellezza le tre altre teste dello stesso in bianco marmo."—*Ibid.*



that case, it is the form, not the colour, of the head, that is beautiful. While greenness of complexion would not be beautiful in a man, it would certainly be hideously ugly in a woman.

Moreover, while, in a dead black or any dark colour of face, it cannot be pretended that, considering its colour only, we should have more than blackness or darkness for admiration, it is evident that, in a fair complexion, we have, in addition to its general brilliance or splendour, the infinite variety of its tints, their exquisite blendings, and the beautiful expression of every transient emotion.

I have now only to expose the sophistry which Payne Knight has employed upon this subject.

“I am aware,” he says, “indeed, that it would be no easy task to persuade a lover that the forms upon which he doats with such rapture are not really beautiful, independent of the medium of affection, passion, and appetite, through which he views them. But before he pronounces either the infidel or the sceptic guilty of blasphemy against nature, let him take a mould from the lovely features or lovely bosom of this masterpiece of creation, and cast a plum-pudding in it (an object by no means disgusting to most men’s appetite), and I think, he will no longer be in raptures with the form, whatever he may be with the substance.”

Now, it happens that a grosser incongruity can scarcely be supposed than that which exists between lovely features or a lovely bosom and a plum-pudding, or between the sentiment of love and the propensity to gluttony; and therefore to place the substance of the pudding, in which internal composition is alone of importance, and shape of none, under the form of



features or a bosom, in which internal structure is unknown or unthought of, and shape or other external properties are alone considered, is a gross and offensive substitution, intended not to enlighten judgment respecting form, but to pervert it, and to degrade the higher object by comparison with the lower one. The shape, moreover, is a true sign in the one case, and a false one in the other.—Of nearly similar character is the following:

“If a man, perfectly possessed both of feeling and of sight—conversant with, and sensible to the charms of women, were even to be in contact with what he conceived to be the most beautiful and lovely of the sex, and at the moment when he was going to embrace her, he was to discover that the parts which he touched only were feminine or human; and that, in the rest of her form, she was an animal of a different species, or a person of his own sex, the total and instantaneous change of his sentiments from one extreme to another, would abundantly convince him that his sexual desires depended as little upon that abstract sense of touch, as upon that of sight.”

That, in detecting an imposture of this kind, admiration would give place to disgust, only proves that the external qualities which were admired were the natural and appropriate signs of the internal qualities expected to be found under them, and that they now cease to interest only because they have become, not naturally less the signs of these qualities, but because they have by a mere trick been rendered insignificant, because truth and nature have been violated, and because the mind feels only disgust at the imposture. I cannot help saying that if Knight was in earnest



when he framed such arguments, his mind was sometimes dull as well as perverse.

“The redness of any morbid inflammation,” he says, “may display a gradation of tint, which, in a pink, or a rose, we should think as beautiful as ‘the purple light of love and bloom of young desire;’ and the cadaverous paleness of death or disease, a degree of whiteness, which, in a piece of marble or alabaster, we should deem to be as pure, as that of the most delicate skin of the fairest damsel of the frigid zone; consequently, the mere visible beauty is in both the same; and the difference consists entirely in mental sympathies, excited by certain internal stimuli, and guided by habit.”

There is here the same confusion of heterogeneous and inconsistent objects, as in the preceding cases. To judge of beauty in simple objects, each quality may be separately considered; and in this view, if the inflammation presented the same tint as the pink or the rose, then, as a mere tint, abstracted from every other quality of the respective objects, it would be precisely as beautiful in the one as in the other; but as the colour of a rose on the human body would indicate that flow of blood to the skin which can result only from excessive action, it ceases to be considered intrinsically, and is regarded only as a sign of disease. The same observations are applicable to the other case here adduced.

“The African black,” he says, “when he first beholds an European complexion, thinks both its red and white morbid and unnatural, and of course disgusting. His sun-burnt beauties express their modesty and sensibility by variations in the sable tints of their countenances, which are equally



attractive to him, as the most delicate blush of red to us."

In treating of the Elements of Beauty, I have endeavoured to show, that the more those simpler elements of beauty, which characterize inanimate bodies, are retained in more compound ones, the more beautiful these become; but that the latter retain these elements in very different degrees, dependent upon internal or external circumstances, and that such elementary beauty is often sacrificed to the higher ones of life or mind. Now, in the case of the African, he is born whitish, like the European, but he speedily loses such beauty for that of adaptation, by his colour, to the hot climate in which he exists. The latter beauty is the higher and more important one; and forms for the African a profitable exchange; but the European is still more fortunate, because, in the region he inhabits, the simple and elementary beauty is compatible with that of adaptation to climate. The climate of Africa, the cerebral structure of its inhabitants, and the degree of their civilization are as unfavourable to the existence of beauty as to the power of judging respecting it. What he adds, as to variation in sable countenances, is a mere exaggeration.

"Were it possible for a person to judge of the beauty of colour in his own species, upon the same principles, and with the same impartiality as he judges of it in other objects, both animal, vegetable, and mineral, there can be no doubt that mixed tints would be preferred; and a pimpled face have the same superiority over a smooth one, as a zebra has over an ass, a variegated tulip over a plain one, or a



column of jasper or porphyry over one of a common red or white marble."

Here the same mistake is committed. Elementary beauty is preferred to that of adaptation to climate, fitness for physiognomical expression, etc. Knight's other arguments all involve similar errors, and admit of similar answers.



## CHAPTER XI.

### THE THREE SPECIES OF FEMALE BEAUTY GENERALLY VIEWED.

THESE have been already briefly mentioned. They are repeated and illustrated here.

The view which is given of them will throw light on the celebrated temperaments of the ancients. It will appear that all the disputes which have occurred respecting these, have arisen from their being founded, not on precise data, but on empirical observation, at a time when the great truths of anatomy and physiology were unknown; that to the rectification of the doctrine of temperaments, the arrangement of these sciences, laid down in a preceding chapter, is indispensable; that some of these temperaments are comparatively simple, and consist in an excessive or a defective action of locomotive, nutritive, or thinking organs; that others, which have been confounded with these, are, on the contrary, compound; and that, from this want of classification, their nature has been imperfectly understood.

To make this clear, it is necessary to lay before the reader a succinct view of the doctrine of temperaments.



The ancients classed individuals in one or other of four temperaments, founded on the hypothesis of four humours, of which the blood was supposed to be composed—the red part, phlegm, yellow, and black bile. These were regarded as the elements of the body, and their respective predominance passed for the cause of the differences which it presented. Hence were derived the names of the sanguine, the phlegmatic, the choleric, and the melancholic temperaments.

Although the hypothesis on which this doctrine was founded is universally discarded, the phenomena which observation had taught the ancients, and which they had hypothetically connected with these elements, were so true, that that classification has been more or less employed in all the hypotheses which have since been invented to explain their cause; and their nomenclature has continued in use to the present day.

A temperament may be defined a peculiar state of the system, depending on the relative proportion of its different masses, and the relative energy of its different functions, by which it acquires a tendency to certain actions.

The predominance of any particular organ or system of organs, its excess of force, extends its sphere of activity to all the other functions, and modifies them in a peculiar manner. Thus, conforming in the illustration to the preceding arrangement, in one person, the muscles are more frequently employed than the brain; in another, the stomach or the organs of reproduction are more employed than the muscles; and in a third, the brain and nerves are more employed than either. This predominance or excess establishes the temperament.



The relative feebleness of any organ or system of organs, similarly forms modifications not less important. Thus in one person, the organs of the abdomen are less employed; in another, those of the chest; in a third, the brain.

Disease, it is observed, "commonly enters into the organization by these feeble points: death even attacks them first; extends afterwards from one to another; and makes progress more or less rapid, according to the importance of the organ primitively affected."

Temperaments, however, vary infinitely. It may be said that every individual has a peculiar one, to which he owes his mode of existence and his degree of health, ability and happiness.

The temperament, moreover, of each individual is not always characterized by well marked symptoms; and even where it has been strongly marked by nature, education, age, the influence of climate, the exercise of professions and trades, and various habits produce in it infinite changes.

Temperaments also combine together, so that all men are, in some degree, at once sanguine and bilious, or otherwise compound. Thus all intermediate shades of temperament are produced; and it is often difficult, or, under particular circumstances, impossible, to determine under which temperament individuals may be classed.

The simple temperaments are therefore abstractions, which it is difficult to realize; and the influence of any temperament is sometimes undiscoverable except in some extraordinary circumstances of disorder or disease, during which it may be observed.

Cullen admits the four temperaments of Hippo-



crates, and remarks concerning them, that it is probable they were first founded upon observation, and afterwards adapted to the theory of the ancients, since we find they "have a real existence."

Dr. Pritchard remarks that, "this division of temperaments is by no means a fanciful distinction."

To the four temperaments of Hippocrates, Gregory adds a fifth, the nervous temperament.

Thus are formed five temperaments generally admitted—namely, 1st, the phlegmatic or relaxed; 2nd, the sanguine arterial; 3rd, the sanguine venous or bilious; 4th, the nervous; and, 5th, the muscular or athletic.

Some writers join to these the partial temperaments which determine the ascendancy of the functions exercised by particular organs; whence principally come the temperaments which they call the cerebral, epigastric, abdominal, hepatic, genital, etc.

As already said, it will in the sequel appear that some of these temperaments are comparatively simple, that others are compound, and that from this want of classification, their nature has been imperfectly understood.



## CHAPTER XII.

### FIRST SPECIES OF BEAUTY—BEAUTY OF THE LOCOMOTIVE SYSTEM.

THE average stature of woman, as already said, is two or three inches less than that of man.

The bones of woman remain always smaller than those of man; the cylindrical ones being more slender, and the flat ones thinner, while the former are also rounder. The muscles render the surfaces of the bones less uneven; the projections of the latter are less; and all their cavities and impressions have less depth. The bones of woman have likewise less hardness than those of man.

Such being the solid and fundamental parts of this system in woman, the most remarkable circumstances in their combination should next be noticed.

In woman, the magnitude of the pelvis or lower part of the trunk, has the greatest influence on the apparent proportion of parts, and on the general figure.

The most remarkable differences between the two sexes, in relation to this system, are consequently those presented by the inferior and superior part of the trunk in each. The breast and the haunches are in an inverse proportion in the two sexes. Man has



the breast larger and wider than that of woman: woman has the haunches less circumscribed than those of man.

The upper part of the body is also less prominent, and the lower part more prominent, in woman than in man: and therefore, when they stand upright, or lie on the back, the breast is most prominent in the male, and the pubes in the female. The indication this affords of the fitness of woman for impregnation, gestation and parturition, is obvious.

From the same cause, the back of woman is more hollow.

Still further to increase the capacity of the lower part of the body, woman has the loins more extended than man. This portion of her body is in every way enlarged at the expense of neighbouring parts. Hence, the chest is shorter above; and the thighs and legs are shorter below.

The thigh-bones of woman are also more separated superiorly; the knees are more approximated; the feet are smaller; and the base of support is less extended.

The reader desirous of thoroughly understanding these matters, should compare the beautiful plates of the male and female skeletons by Albinus and Sæmmerring.

Beauty of the locomotive system in woman, depends especially upon these fundamental facts, and those tendencies of structure which thus distinguish her from man.

In the woman possessing THIS SPECIES of beauty, therefore, the face is generally somewhat bony and oblong; the neck, less connected with the nutritive system, is rather long and tapering;—the shoulders,



without being angular, are sufficiently broad and definite for muscular attachments;—the bosom, a vital organ, is of but moderate dimensions;—the waist, enclosing smaller nutritive organs, is remarkable for fine proportion, and resembles, in some respects, an inverted cone;—the haunches, for the same reason, are but moderately expanded;—the thighs are proportional;—the arms, as well as the limbs, being formed chiefly of locomotive organs, are rather long and moderately tapering;—the hands and feet are moderately small; the complexion, owing to the inferiority of the nutritive system, is often rather dark; and the hair is frequently dark and strong.—The whole figure is precise, striking, and often brilliant.—From its proportions, it sometimes seems almost ærial; and we would imagine, that, if our hands were placed under the lateral parts of the tapering waist of a woman thus characterized, the slightest pressure would suffice to throw her into the air.

To this class belong generally the more firm, vigorous, and even actively impassioned women: though it may doubtless boast many of greatly modified character.

This species of beauty is very well illustrated in Plates V., VI., and VII.

#### FIRST VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

It may here be observed, that the varieties or modifications of each species of beauty naturally correspond with the greater or less development of some one of the various organs on which the species is founded. Thus the modifications of beauty of





PLATE V.











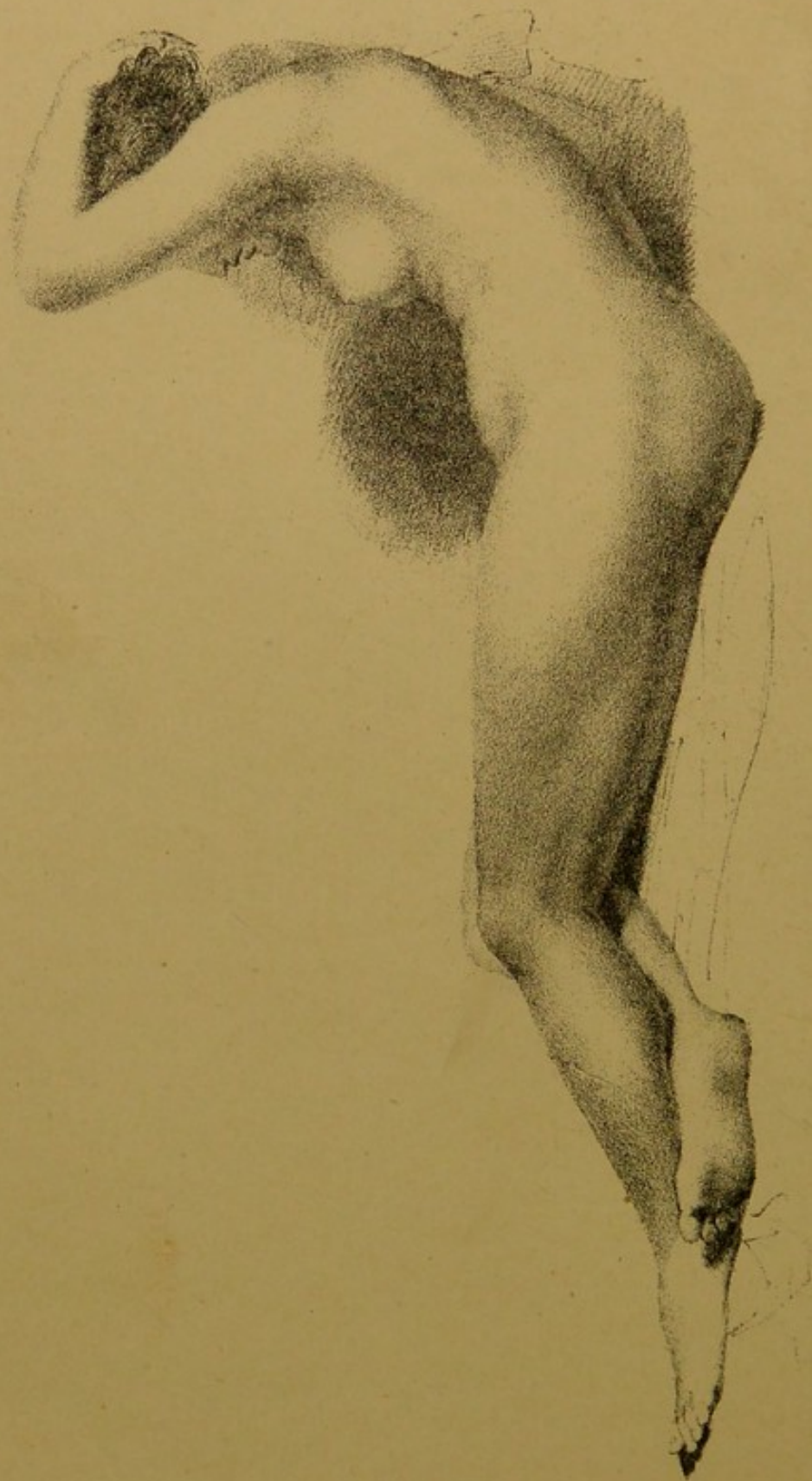


PLATE VI.



the locomotive system correspond with the greater or less development of the bones, the ligaments, or the muscles ; those of the nutritive system correspond with the greater or less development of the absorbents, the blood-vessels, or the glands ; and those of the thinking system correspond with the greater or less development of the organs of sense, the brain, or the cerebel. A little reflection will show that some of these modifications will be more, and others less beautiful.

To understand the present variety, the bony structure on which it especially depends, must now be more minutely described.

Commencing with the trunk of the body,—the chest in woman is shorter, but more expanded ; the breast-bone is shorter, but wider ; the two upper ribs are flatter ; the collar-bones are more straight or less curved, and do not present that prominent relief which appears on the chest of man ; the shoulders are carried further back, and project less from the trunk.

The haunches, as already stated, are proportionally wider in woman than in man, and the interior cavity of the pelvis, which is between them, being adapted to gestation, is more capacious. This greater capacity of the pelvis arises from the lateral parts having in woman more convexity outward ; from the bones called ossa pubis, which form the anterior part, touching at a smaller number of points, and running obliquely or forming a greater angle, to enlarge the space which is between them and the inferior extremity of the posterior part of the pelvis ; from the arch of the pubis being larger ; from the greater concavity and breadth of the os sacrum or posterior



bone of the pelvis, its posterior part forming a greater prominence outwards; and from the whole pelvis being thus wider and less deep, its circumference approaching more to the circular form. The cavities, it may be added, in which the heads of the thigh bones are received, are of course further apart: they are also oblique, and less deep.

The arms of woman are shorter than in man.—As these members are well marked in beauty of the locomotive system, they may the more fully be considered here.—The arms, and especially their extremities, are susceptible of a degree of beauty of which we see few examples. Their bases, the bones, ligaments, and muscles, belong to the locomotive system; and their fundamental beauty consequently depends upon its proportions; but to the nutritive system are owing the circumstances that in woman, the arm is fatter and more rounded, has softer forms and more flowing and purer outlines. The hand in woman is smaller, more plump, more soft, and more white. It is peculiarly beautiful when full; when it is gently dimpled over the first joints; when the fingers are long, round, tapering towards the ends; when the other joints are marked by slight reliefs and shadows; and when the fingers are delicate and flexible. Beauty of the hand becomes the more precious, because it is the principal organ of a sense which may be considered as the most valuable of all.

In regard to the lower extremities, it has been observed, that the lateral convexity of the pelvis causes the bones of the thighs attached to them to be further separated from each other; and this separation of the bones of the thighs causes an









PLATE VII



increase of the size of the haunches. It is over the posterior part of the space thus produced, that we observe the reliefs which the inferior members present superiorly, and which unite them with the trunk, by forms so beautifully rounded. The thighs are also proportionally larger, on account of this separation: they are more rounded, as well as much more voluminous: they are also more curved before than in man. At their inferior part, they approximate; and the knees project a little inward. It has been truly observed that this conformation manifests, relatively to gestation and parturition, advantages of which the exterior expression is not found in the women who are commonly regarded as well-made, and who, however, are not so, if the best conformation or beauty result from a direct and well marked relation between the form of the organs and their functions. It is owing to the thighs of woman being thus carried more inward when she walks, that the change of the point of gravity which marks each step, is in her much more remarkable. All the other parts of the inferior members are in general distinguished by forms more softly rounded; the leg is remarkable for its delicacy; the long line of the anterior bone is entirely hid under its envelope; its inferior part is shaped with more elegance; the foot is smaller; and the base of support is less extended. The feet, like the hands, are susceptible of a kind of beauty of which nature is sparing.

From all this it appears that the only bones which nature tends to enlarge in woman are those of the pelvis; that all the rest are small; and that they



proportionally diminish in size, as we pass from that central part to the extremities.

The FIRST MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty, is that in which the development of the bones, those of the pelvis excepted, is proportionally small.

This character will be especially apparent where the long bones approach the surface; as in the arm immediately above the wrist, and, in the leg, immediately above the ankle. Its effect will be proportionally delicate and feminine.

Various subordinate modifications of this kind of beauty are found in various countries, and under the influence of various circumstances.

The women of Rome, we are told, present beauty of the shoulders in the highest degree, when they arrive at that period of life in which plumpness succeeds to juvenile elasticity.

It has been suggested, that the Greek or Ionian women, whose arms were of so perfect a form, owed that beauty in some measure to the custom of leaving them nude, or covered only by loose drapery: as in that case, no pressure constricted the roundness of the fleshy parts, and prevented their development; no ligature, binding the upper part of the arm, altered the colour of the skin; and the arm, being always uncovered, received at the toilet the same attention as other parts. Hence, it is supposed, antique statuary has left us such admirable models of the beauty of this part.

It is certainly not improbable that we may attribute the absence of this beauty, in some measure, to a custom which, in many cases, medicine may approve, but which is unfavourable to



the arm, that of wearing long sleeves ; but want of exercise is its great cause.

The form of the hand often announces the occupation of the person to whom it belongs, and sometimes even her particular capabilities. There certainly are hands that we may call intellectual ; and there are others that we may call foolish or stupid. Of the hand, Lavater says, that, whether in movement or in repose, its expression cannot be mistaken ; its most tranquil position indicates our natural dispositions ; its flexions, our actions and our passions.

The ancients, it has been observed, attached much importance to the form of the feet : the philosophers did not neglect it in the general view of the physiognomy ; and the historians as well as the poets made mention of their beauty, in speaking of Polyxene, Aspasia, and others ; as they did of their deformities in speaking of the emperor Domitian.

Perfection or deformity of the feet is no doubt, in general, hereditary ; but good management will preserve the former of these, and repair the latter. We commonly deform these parts by means of our shoes ; the second toe, observes a writer on this subject, which naturally projects most, as we see from the antique, is arrested in its development, and the foot, which ought, in the outline of its extremity, to approach to the elegant form of the ellipsis, is rounded without beauty, and is disfigured by our ridiculous compressions.

#### SECOND VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

The joints generally are small in woman, and especially so in the extremities. The elbow joint



is softly rounded ; and the various joints of the fingers are marked chiefly by little reliefs and faint shadows. The articulation of the knee is feebly indicated ; the ankles are disposed in such a manner as to offer only agreeable outlines ; and there are dimples over the first joints of the toes, with exceedingly gentle indications of the other joints.

The SECOND MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty is that in which the development of the ligaments and the articulations they form, is proportionally small.

This conformation will be especially apparent,—in the arm, at the wrist,—and, in the leg, at the ankle. Its effect will be proportionally handsome.

#### THIRD VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

The muscles of woman are more slender and feeble than those of man ; their bundles are rounder ; their fibres are finer, more humid, soft, and delicate, and less compact ; their central parts or bellies are less prominent ; their reliefs do not appear in any strength at the surface of the body ; but being, on the contrary, surrounded on all sides by a loose cellular tissue, they only render that surface beautifully rounded.

Although, however, the muscular system of woman is weaker, and the muscles proportionally smaller, yet, as already said, in some parts the muscular system is more developed than in man. This, owing to the magnitude of the pelvis, is most remarkable about the thighs. The muscles of these parts having larger origins from the pelvis, and being less compressed by reciprocal contact, have more liberty to extend themselves. The thighs of women are con-



sequently remarkable for their voluptuous fulness, the softness of their outlines, and their exquisite polish. It is from this that results much of the delicacy of the female form, as well as the ease, suppleness, and capability of grace in its movements.

It is otherwise in all parts remote from the pelvis. Women, accordingly, can less be said to have calves, than legs which, like their arms and fingers, gently taper.

The THIRD MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty is that in which the development of the muscles is proportionally large around the pelvis, and delicate elsewhere.

This conformation being concealed by the drapery, may nevertheless be conjectured from the imperfect view of the hip, or of the calf of the leg, or, more accurately, by means of the external indications of form which are given in a subsequent chapter. Its effect will be proportionally elegant.

Woman's power of muscular motion being thus limited to the vicinity of the pelvis, that of her extremities is generally feeble.

Other causes contribute to this. Thus, with regard to the upper extremities, it has been observed, that the collar-bone, not separating so much the arm from the axis of the body, the extent of its movements is limited; and this circumstance explains why women, who wish to overcome great resistances with the superior members, experience difficulty in doing so—why, for example, when they wish to throw a stone, they are obliged to turn the body on the foot opposite to the arm with which they throw.

Thus also the largeness of the pelvis, and the



approximation of the knees, influence the gait of woman, and render it vacillating and unsteady. Conscious of this, women, in countries where the nutritive system in general and the pelvis in particular are large, affect a greater degree of this vacillation and unsteadiness. An example of this is seen in the lateral and rotatory motion which is given to the pelvis in walking, by certain classes of the women of London.

For the same reason, united to a smaller foot, and some other circumstances, women, it is observed, who execute gentle and light movements with so much skill, do not attempt with advantage great evolutions, run with difficulty and without grace, and fly—in order to be caught, as Rousseau has said.

In woman, however, the muscular fibre is thus soft, yielding, feeble and incapable of great evolutions, because it is necessary that it should easily adapt itself to remarkable changes.

From all this, from women having more address in the use of their fingers, from their aptitude for little and light domestic works, the care of children, and sedentary occupations, it is evident that they cannot devote themselves to toilsome labours without struggling against their organization, and suffering proportionally.

The voice being connected with the motive organs, it may here be noticed that the larynx or flute part of the throat in woman is more contracted and less prominent than in man; that the glottis does not enlarge in the same proportion; that the tongue-bone is much smaller; and that the tongue, its muscles, and the organs of speech in general, being, like all the other parts, more mobile, young girls









PLATE VIII.



articulate and pronounce much more quickly. Their voice is also so much more acute, that if man and woman sing in unison, there is always between them the relation of an octave, which forms the most natural and most agreeable consonance.

---

It is evidently the UNION of all that is good in these varieties which renders beauty in the locomotive system perfect.

This is perfectly represented in the Diana of Grecian sculpture, in which, with admirable taste, it is neither the nutritive nor the thinking, but the locomotive system, which is developed.—See Plate VIII.

---

I have already said, that the temperaments of the ancients are only partial views of some of the varieties I am now describing. The *athletic temperament* falls under the *last of these varieties*; and it is the only one that falls under this species. Happily, it does not occur in woman.

This temperament results from a great development of the bones and muscles, and is that of mere physical strength. It is marked by all the outward signs of strength: the head is small, the neck thick behind, the shoulders broad, the chest expanded, the haunches firm, the intervals of the muscles deeply marked, the tendons apparent through the skin, and all the joints not covered by muscles, seemingly small.

In this temperament, muscular strength prevails over the functions of the other organs, and especially usurps the energies necessary to the production of



thought ; the perceptions are deficient in quickness, delicacy, accuracy, and strength ; and all the mental functions are with difficulty excited ; but the body is capable of great exertion, and it surmounts great physical resistance when roused.

The Farnese Hercules, says a French physiologist, exhibits a model of the physical attributes of this constitution ; and that which fabulous antiquity relates of the exploits of this demigod, gives us the idea of the moral dispositions that accompany it. In the history of his twelve labours, without reflection and as by instinct, we see him courageous, because he is strong, seeking obstacles to conquer them, certain of overwhelming whatever resists him, but joining to such strength so little subtlety, that he is cheated by all the kings he serves, and by all the women he loves.



## CHAPTER XIII.

### SECOND SPECIES OF BEAUTY.—BEAUTY OF THE NUTRITIVE SYSTEM.

WITH the vital system of woman, the capacity of the pelvis and the consequent breadth of the haunches, are still more connected than with the locomotive system; for, with these, all those functions which are most essentially feminine—impregnation, gestation, and parturition, are intimately connected.

Camper, in a memoir on physical beauty, read to the Academy of Design at Amsterdam,<sup>1</sup> showed, that in tracing the forms of the male and female within two elliptical areas of equal size, the female pelvis extended beyond the ellipsis, while the shoulders were within; and the male shoulders reached beyond their ellipsis, while the pelvis was within.—The pelvis of the African woman is said by some to be greater than that of the European.

The abdominal and lumbar portion of the trunk, as already said, is longer in woman. In persons above the common stature, there is almost half a face more in the part of the body which is between the mammæ and the bifurcation of the trunk.

<sup>1</sup> Memoire sur le Beau Physique.



The abdomen, placed below the chest, has more projection and roundness in woman than in man: but it has little fulness in a figure capable of serving as a model; and the slightest alteration in its outlines or its polish is injurious.

The waist, which is most distinctly marked in the back and loins, owes all its advantages to its elegance, softness and flexibility.

The neck should, by the gentlest curvature, form an almost insensible transition between the body and the head. It should also present fulness sufficient to conceal the projection of the flute part of the throat in front, and of the two large muscles which descend from behind the ears toward the pit above the breast bone.<sup>1</sup>

Over all these parts, the predominance of the cellular tissue, and the soft and moderate plumpness which is connected with it, is a remarkable characteristic of the vital system in woman.—While this facilitates the adaptation of the locomotive system to every change, it, at the same time, obliterates the projection of the muscles, and invests the whole figure with rounded and beautiful forms.

It has been well observed that the principal effect of such forms upon the observer, must be referred to the faculties which they reveal; for, as remarked by Roussel, if we examine the greater part of the attributes which constitute beauty, if reason analyze

<sup>1</sup> A curious but true remark is made by Moreau, namely, that if these conditions are met with without being united to a certain expression, and to the most complete combination of the elements of beauty of countenance, they frequently give an air of insensibility and of mental weakness, which greatly enfeebles the impression that a first view had caused.



that which instinct judges at a glance, we shall find that these attributes have a reference to real advantages for the species. A light shape, supple movements, whence spring brilliance and grace, are qualities which please, because they announce the good condition of the individual who possesses them, and the greater degree of aptitude for the functions which that individual ought to fulfil.

Beauty, then, of the nutritive system in woman depends especially upon these fundamental facts, and those tendencies of structure which thus distinguish her from man.

In the woman possessing THIS SPECIES of beauty, therefore, the face is generally rounded, to give greater room to the cavities connected with nutrition;—the eyes are generally of the softest azure, which is similarly associated;—the neck is often rather short, in order intimately to connect the head with the nutritive organs in the trunk;—the shoulders are softly rounded, and owe any breadth they may possess rather to the expanded chest, containing these organs, than to any bony or muscular size of the shoulders themselves;—the bosom, a vital organ, in its luxuriance seems laterally to protrude on the space occupied by the arms;—the waist, though sufficiently marked, is, as it were, encroached on by that plumpness of all the contiguous parts which the powerful nutritive system affords;—the haunches are greatly expanded for the vital purposes of gestation and parturition;—the thighs are large in proportion;—but the locomotive organs, the limbs and arms, tapering and becoming delicate, terminate in feet and hands which, compared with the ample trunk, are



peculiarly small;—the complexion, dependent upon nutrition, has the rose and lily so exquisitely blended, that we are surprised it should defy the usual operation of the elements;—and there is a luxuriant profusion of soft and fine flaxen or auburn hair.—The whole figure is soft and voluptuous in the extreme.

To this class belong all the more feminine, soft, and passively voluptuous women.

This species of beauty is illustrated in Plates IX., X., XI.—These illustrate the vital system as fully developed in forms of considerable breadth.—The kind of beauty characterized by them is seen chiefly in the Saxon races of our eastern coast; and it is certainly more frequent in women of short stature.

The vital system is peculiarly the system of woman; and so truly is this the case, that any great employment, either of the locomotive or mental organs, deranges the peculiar functions of woman, and destroys the characteristics of her sex.

Women who greatly occupy the locomotive organs, acquire a coarse and masculine appearance; and so well is this incompatibility of power in the use of locomotive organs with the exercise of vital ones, known to the best female dancers, that during the time of their engagements, they generally live apart from their husbands.

As to intellectual ladies, they either seldom become mothers, or they become intellectual when they cease to be mothers.

These few facts are worth a thousand hypotheses and dreams, however amiable they may be.

The vital system is relatively largest in little women, especially after they have been mothers.





PLATE IX.







The shorter stature of woman ensures, indeed, in almost all, a relative excess of the vital system after, if not before, they become mothers; for, whatever the stature, the mammæ, abdomen, etc., necessarily expand. In those of short stature, these parts, of course, become nearly as large as in the tall; and this circumstance causes them to touch on the limits of each other in little women.

As, in pregnancy and suckling, the abdomen and mammæ necessarily expand, and as they would afterwards collapse and become wrinkled, were not a certain degree of plumpness acquired, that acquisition is essential to beauty in mothers. Meagreness in them, accordingly, becomes deformity.

A French writer indeed says, "Most of our fashionables are extremely slender; they have constituted this an essential to beauty; leanness is in France necessary to the *air élégant*." It must be remembered, however, that the vital system—that which we have just said is peculiarly the system of woman, is, in its most beautiful parts, peculiarly defective in France; and that, owing in a great measure to that circumstance, the women of France are amongst the ugliest in Europe.—But of that in its proper place.

#### FIRST VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

It may here be observed, that the varieties of beauty of the locomotive system, and also those of beauty of the mental system, are easily explicable, because these systems are, in some respects, more limited and simple. The varieties of beauty of the vital system are, on the contrary, more difficult of explanation, because that system is, in some respects, more diffused and complicated.



Even the preparatory vital organs and functions differ somewhat in the two sexes.

Woman has frequently a smaller number of molar teeth than man; those called wisdom teeth not always appearing. Mastication is also less energetic in woman.

The stomach, in woman, is much smaller; the appetite for food is less; hunger does not appear to press her so imperiously; and her consumption of food is much less considerable.<sup>1</sup> Hence indubitable cases of long abstinence from food, have generally occurred in females.

In the choice and the preference of certain aliments, woman also differs much from man. In general, women prefer light and agreeable food, which flatters the palate by its perfume and its savour. Their appetites are also much more varied.

Women, whom vicious habits have not depraved, use also beverages less abundantly than men. Fermented, vinous and spirituous beverages are indeed used only by the monsters engendered in the corruption of towns—amidst the insane dissipation of the rich, or the wretched and pitiable suffering of the poor; and both are then brought to one humiliating level, marked by the red and pimpled, or the palid face, the swimming eye, the haggard features, the pestilential breath. The scarf-skin in these cases divides all that may be worthy from all that is utterly worthless: the worthy part may be external to the cuticle, in substantial, though polluted clothing; the worthless is the yet living portion, which, whether

<sup>1</sup> Statistical results in relation to the supply of hospitals and prisons, carry the expense of a man much beyond that of a woman.





PLATE X.







called body or soul, is no longer worth picking off a dunghill.

Digestion in woman is made, however, with great rapidity; and the whole canal interested in that process possesses great irritability.

The absorbent vessels in woman are much more developed, and seem to enjoy a more active vitality. The circumstances of pregnancy and suckling appear also to augment the energy of these vessels.

The FIRST MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty, is that in which the digestive and absorbent system is small but active; for the great purpose of life in woman is secretion, whether it regard the formation of the superficial adipose substance which invests her with beautiful and attractive forms, or the nutrition of the new being which is the object of her attractions and of her life.

Hence it is that women naturally and instinctively affect abstemiousness and delicacy of appetite. Hence it is that they compress the waist, and endeavour to render it slender.

#### SECOND VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

Women have, in greater abundance than men, several of the liquids which enter into the composition of the body. They appear to have a greater quantity of blood; and they certainly have more frequent and more considerable hemorrhages. There is less force in the circulation and respiration; but the heart beats more rapidly. The pulse also is less full, but it is more quick and more firm.

In woman, the purer lily and more vivid rose of complexion depend on various causes.

It would appear that, in women, the blood is in



general carried less abundantly to the surface and to the extremities, where also the white vessels are more developed; and that, to this, as well as to the subjacent adipose substance, the skin owes its whiteness.

In youth, however, one of the constituent parts of the skin, the reticular tissue, or whatever the substance under the scarf-skin may be called, appears to be more expanded, especially in women; and it would seem that this tissue is then filled with a blood which is less dark, and which forms the colouring of youth. This, differently modified by the scarf-skin, gives the blue, the purple, and all the tints formed by these and the colour of the skin. Where the vessels are more patent, and the skin more thin, delicate and transparent, as in the cheeks, the hue of the rose is cast over that of the lily. In addition to this, the slightest emotions of surprise, of pleasure, of love, of shame, of fear, often diversify all these tints.

Lightness of complexion, however, is probably dependent more particularly on the arterial circulation, and darkness of complexion on the venous circulation; for we know that in fairer woman the arteries possess greater energy, while in darker man the veins are more developed, larger and fuller.

Further confirmation of this is afforded by an observation, which physiologists have neglected to make, that the kidneys, receiving arterial blood, are the artery-relieving glands, while the liver, receiving venous blood, is the vein-relieving gland. Now, it is certain that, in cold climates, the urinary secretion and fairness prevail; while, in hot climates, the hepatic secretion and darkness prevail. Many physiologists have indeed made the insulated remark, that



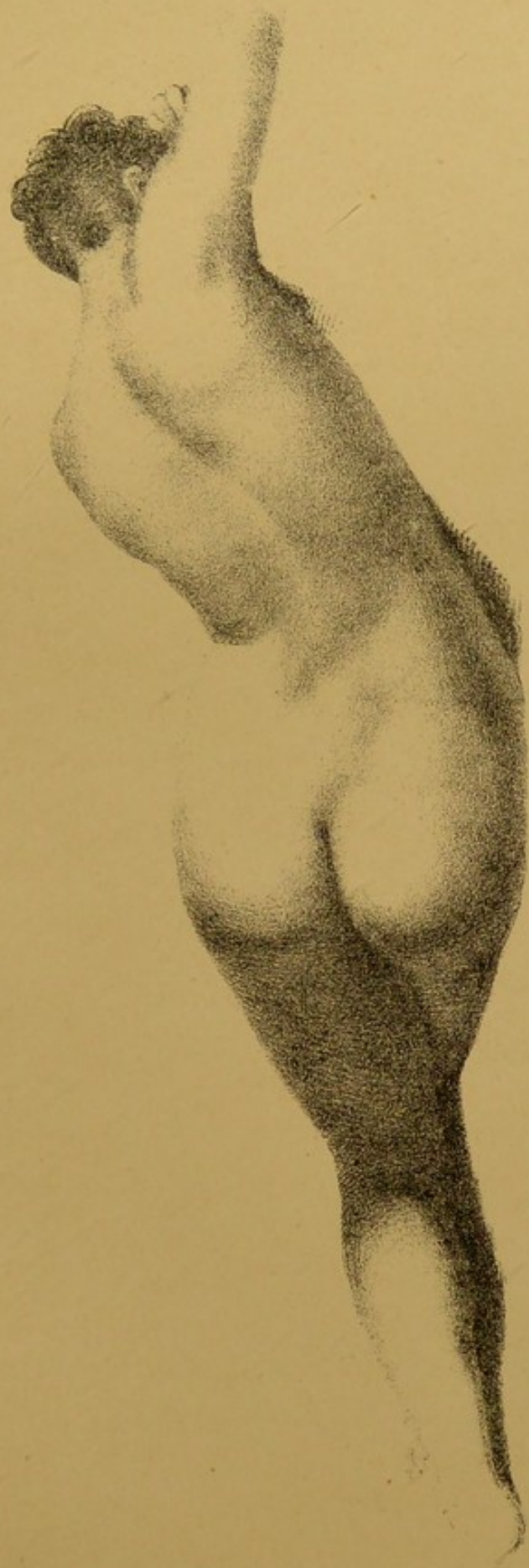


PLATE XI.







the dark complexion has much to do with the hepatic secretion. The more abundant urinary and hepatic secretions, however, may not be the causes, but only concomitant effects of the same cause with fairness and darkness of complexion.

The SECOND MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty, is that in which the circulating vessels, being moderately active and finely ramified, bestow upon the skin a whiteness, a transparency, and a complexion, which are necessary to beauty.

The whiteness, the transparency, and the colour of the skin have, in all highly civilized nations, been deemed essential conditions of beauty.

The ancients regarded whiteness, in particular, as the distinctive character of beauty; and they estimated that character so highly, that the name of Venus, from the Celtic *ven*, *ben*, or *ban*, signifies white, or whiteness; and Venus herself is said to be fair and golden haired.

Among the civilized moderns, also, a taste which women seek always to satisfy, is that for whiteness of the skin; hence the white lily, new fallen snow, white marble, or alabaster, are the images which poetry employs, when the colour of a woman is its subject. So greatly, indeed, does whiteness contribute to beauty, that many women deemed beautiful by us, have little other right to that epithet except what they derive from a beautiful skin.

#### THIRD VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

The branches of the great artery of the body, the aorta, supplying the abdomen and pelvis, are larger in woman than in man, as well as more habitually liable to variation in the quantity of their



contents. The quantity of blood, also, which passes to the abdomen, is greater.

At the same time, the excretions are generally less in woman. Hippocrates says, "*Nam corpus muliebre minus dissipatur quam virile;*" the expenditure of the body of woman is less than that of man.

It is evident, then, that the secretions, nutrition in particular, must be greater. We actually know them to be so.

But the nourishment of the organs concerned in locomotion is less active, and that of the cellular and adipose substance is generally more active than in man. And on this, important consequences depend.

Woman is subject to crises which would destroy all her organs if they offered too powerful a resistance. Some parts of her body are exposed to great shocks, to alternate extensions, compressions, and reductions, which could not take place with impunity, but by means of this predominance of the cellular and adipose structure.

The cellular expansion, the general basis of the structure, appears then to be more abundant in woman, more lax and yielding, more dilated and fuller of liquids; and it is by yielding gradually, by decomposing and weakening shocks by means of the general suppleness of the different organs, thus procured, that nature seems, in woman, to avoid, or to destroy, every hurtful effort.

It is observed, moreover, that certain parts, naturally more loose, receive into all their vessels a more considerable quantity of liquid, and assume a particular enlargement, at the moment when



their sympathy with the uterus causes them to enter into action in concert with it; and it is also observed that they dilate more easily during pregnancy.

It is thus, then, that nature gives to all the parts of woman that suppleness which renders her capable of easily yielding to the great revolutions which affect her organization in regard to reproduction, as well as mark the different periods of her life.

The great development of the cellular and fatty tissue in woman is illustrated by the remarkable fact, that anciently the Romans, in order to burn the bodies of dead men, were obliged to join to them those of women, the fat of which greatly facilitated combustion.

Now, with the great purposes described above, beauty is naturally associated. It is principally this excess of the cellular and fatty tissues which gives to the members of woman those round and beautiful outlines, that soft and polished surface, which the body of man does not possess.

In every part, however, of the human figure, as observed by Reynolds, "when not spoiled by too great corpulency, will be found distinctness, the parts never appearing uncertain or confused, or as a musician would say, slurred; and all those smaller parts which are comprehended in the larger compartment are still found to be there, however marked."

Now, while all this is the case, it appears that the true skin is much thinner and more delicate in woman than in man, and that it derives more or less of its clear whiteness from the quantity of fat which is below it; for meagreness inevitably tar-



nishes and dries it. Hence to possess a fine, soft, white and fresh skin, it is also indispensable to possess plumpness.

In relation to this purer white, it must also be observed, that transpiration, which might soil it, appears to be much less abundant in woman; and that the liver, or vein-relieving gland, is very large. The excretions of the skin in women are indeed chiefly limited to certain parts; and it is thence that it has in various parts an odour which a French writer observes "it is difficult to describe, but which an exercised sense of smell easily succeeds in distinguishing in women who fully enjoy all the attributes of their sex, and who are women even in the atmosphere which exhales from them."

While the skin is thus more white in women, it is also more transparent. The reticular tissue, or substance interposed between the true skin and scarf-skin, appears to have more clearness and turgescence, especially on the face, where, under the influence of various emotions, it easily permits a passage to the blood, as we see in blushing. It is in youth that this turgescence and clearness are most evident.

Hence the skin in woman less conceals the veins, of which the colour, only enfeebled or modified by the skin, "gives all those shades of azure which the charmed eye follows with so much pleasure on the surface of the bosom and of all the parts where the skin has least of thickness."

All this constitutes freshness, or animation, which is nearly synonymous with health, and without which there is no beauty. When that quality, as observed by Roussel, "is wanting, all other attractions strike



but feebly, because the prompt judgment, which instinct suggests, warns us that the woman whose person does not present all the characters of perfect health, is in a disposition little favourable to the plan of nature, relatively to the maintenance of the species."

The whiteness and the animation of the skin, however, do not alone constitute its beauty: there is still another quality which is absolutely necessary to it. This is the softness and the polish which, as the reader has seen, is one of the first conditions of physical beauty. In woman, this is probably derived from a slight degree of oleaginous secretion. Hence she has few asperities of the skin, especially on the surface of the bosom, on the inside of the thighs, where the skin is excessively smooth, and elsewhere.

Brown women, who probably have more of this oleaginous secretion, are said to possess in a greater degree the polish of skin which gives impressions so agreeable to the organ of touch; and hence Winckelmann has said that persons who prefer brown women to fair ones, allow themselves to be captivated by the touch rather than the sight.<sup>1</sup> There is reason, however, to doubt the accuracy of this. Brown women appear to have greater softness, but less smoothness of skin.

The body of woman is nearly deprived of hairs upon all parts, except the head, axillæ, etc.; and

<sup>1</sup> Quegli che preferisce la bruna non mal s'appone certamente, se più del tatto che dallo sguardo si lasci attrarre; poichè generalmente la pelle d'una mano bruna (quando tal sia naturalmente, e non per l'azione del sole e dell'aria) è più dilicata e morbida che quella d'una mano candida."—*Storia delle Arti del Disegno*.



the hair of her head is generally long, fine, and flexible.

The quantity and the colour of the hair is always in relation to the constitution of the individual to which it belongs, and generally to the temperature of the place. The people of northern countries have the hair of a silky fineness and of surprising length.

The hair which is most admired is not only very fine and flexible, but light coloured. Fair golden hair was, of all its tints, that which the ancient artists preferred.

In woman, the hair of the head whitens and falls later than in man.

It is curious that, in regard to the hair, the distinctive characters of the sexes should not always have been preserved. Though nature gives long hair to woman, it has sometimes been the fashion to wear it short; and though man has naturally shorter hair, it has sometimes been the fashion to cherish its growth, and to shave the beard from his face. The latter has especially been the case in degenerate and effeminate times; and this has sometimes been accompanied by remarkable consequences.

One of the greatest misfortunes, says a French writer, which France ever had to lament, the divorce of Louis le Jeune from Elinor of Guyenne, resulted from the fashion, which this prince wished to introduce, of shaving his chin and cropping his head. The queen, his wife, who appears to have possessed, with a masculine beauty, considerable acuteness of intellect, observed with some displeasure, that she imagined herself to have espoused a monarch, not a



monk. The obstinacy of Louis in shaving himself, and the horror conceived by Elinor at the sight of a beardless chin, occasioned France the loss of those fine provinces which constituted the dowry of this princess; and which, devolving to England by a second marriage, became the source of wars which desolated France during 400 years.

The habit of wearing the beard is a manly and noble one. Nature made it distinctive of the male and female; and its abandonment has commonly been accompanied not only by periods of general effeminacy, but even by the decline and fall of states. They were bearded Romans who conquered the then beardless Greeks; they were bearded Goths who vanquished the then beardless Romans; and they are bearded Tartars who now promise once more to inundate the regions occupied by the shaven and effeminate people of Western Europe.

In further illustration of the manliness of this habit we may observe, that throughout Europe, wars have generally led to its temporary and partial introduction, as at the present day. Those assuredly blunder, who ridicule the wearing of the beard. Silly affectation, on the contrary, is imputable only to those who, by removing the beard, take the trouble so far to emasculate themselves! and who think themselves beautified by an unnatural imitation of the smoother face of woman!

As appendages of the skin, the nails may here be noticed. Their beauty consists in their figure, their surface, and their colour.

By their figure, they serve as a defence to the delicate extremities of the fingers, which would otherwise be easily hurt against hard bodies. They form



at once shields and supporting arches to the fingers; and they give facility in laying hold of bodies which would escape from their smallness. They ought accordingly to be arched, and to extend as far as the flesh which terminates the fingers.—The form of the nails depends much on the care employed in cutting them during infancy, and still more on the mode of employing the hand.

The nails ought to be smooth and polished, somewhat transparent, and rose-coloured. Their rosy-colour seems to show that their texture has less density and more transparenence.

It is in this view of the nutritive system and the characteristics which render it beautiful, and especially after this portion of it which regards the organs and functions of secretion, that the *mammæ* and their beauty should be considered.

In woman, the bust is smaller and more rounded than in man; and it is distinguished by the volume and the elegant form of the bosom.

The external and elevated position of the *mammæ* is by far the most suitable for a nursling, which, no longer deriving subsistence from within the mother, nor yet able of itself to find it without, must be gently and softly borne toward her; an admirable position, says a French writer, “which, in keeping the infant under the eyes and in the arms of the mother, establishes between them an interesting exchange of tenderness, of cares, and of innocent caresses, which enables the one the better to express its wants, and the other to enjoy the sacrifices which she makes, in continually contemplating their object.”

According to Buffon, in order that the *mammæ* be



well placed, it is necessary that the space between them should be as great as that from the mammæ to the middle of the depression between the clavicles, so that these three points form an equilateral triangle.

The two portions of the mammæ should be well detached. The whole presents in beautiful models more elegance than volume; and the areola, it may be observed, is red in fair women, and deeper coloured in brown ones.

Winckelmann observes that, in the antique statues, the mammæ terminate gently in a point, and that they have always virginal forms, as a consequence of the system of the ancient artists, which consists in not recalling in the ideal the wants and the accidents of humanity.

Finally, on this particular head, I must observe that the reproduction of the species is, in woman, the most important object of life, and that everything in her physical organization has evident reference to it. Of all the passions in woman, says Richerand, "love has the greatest sway: it has even been said to be her only passion. All the others are modified by it, and receive from it a peculiar cast, which distinguishes them from those of man. . . . Fontenelle used to say of the devotion of some women, 'One may see that love has been here.' It has been said, in speaking of St. Theresa, '*To love God is still to love.*' Thomas maintains that, 'With women a man is more than a nation.' 'Love,' says Madame de Stael, 'is but an episode in the life of man; it is the whole history of the life of woman.'"

The THIRD MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty, is that in which the secreting vessels being active, not only cause the plumpness, etc., necessary



to beauty, but furnish the mammary and uterine secretions, on which progeny is dependent. This must inevitably be followed by moderate secretions.

It should not pass unobserved that there exist, in some women, a fair skin and dark hair, forming a rather extraordinary and striking combination. As such women have the skin remarkably smooth and moist, this is probably connected with some peculiarity of secretion and excretion.

---

It is evidently the UNION of all that is good in these varieties which renders beauty in the vital system perfect.

This is illustrated, though not strongly, in the Venus de Medici.—See the Frontispiece.

This union is nowhere so frequently to be seen as in England and in Holland.

It is curious that cleanliness among women seems necessarily to increase with the development of this system; and that, in general, dirtiness increases as we pass from England and Holland, towards France, Italy, Spain, and Portugal, even among women of the highest condition.

---

Of the temperaments of the ancients, which, as already said, are only partial views of some of the varieties I am now describing, two, the *phlegmatic temperament* and the *sanguine temperament*, appear to belong fundamentally to *this species*. It has been supposed, that the first affects the absorbent, the second the circulating system. They appear to me to be exactly opposite affections of the whole nutritive system at least.



The phlegmatic temperament may exist in both sexes. The causes which tend to develop it, are infancy, humidity with cold, the absence of light, indolence, and the feeble influence of the reproductive functions upon the general system.

In this temperament, there exists an excess in the proportions of the absorbent vessels; the pulse is weak, slow, and soft; there is a turgescence of the cellular tissue, and a more marked development of the glands; the internal stimulants, having less energy than in the other temperaments, life is less active, and all its actions are more or less languid; even the uterus is not endowed with suitable energy.

But these characteristics are not confined to the nutritive system: they extend to the thinking one. The attention is not continuous; the perceptions succeed with some difficulty; the memory is not to be trusted; the imagination is weak; and the propensities, the appetites, and the passions are so languid, as to be scarcely capable of troubling the quietude and the indolence which depend on such a constitution.

These characteristics of the phlegmatic temperament present to us forms more rounded and less expressive, a general softness, a feeble colour of the skin, a sort of etiolation, a pale countenance, a light and abundant hair, and, generally, an insurmountable inclination to sloth, averse alike to labours of the mind and body.

It has been observed, that the sanguine temperament, so generally met with among northern nations, is the necessary consequence of the continual and very energetic re-action of the powers of circulation, against the effects of external cold; that it is only



by the constant activity of the heart and vessels that calorification can be effected with the necessary vigour; and that the effects of this redoubled action are the same to the organs of circulation as to the muscles, under the influence of volition; exertion in both, increasing the power of the organs exerted.

In the sanguine temperament, the lymphatic, circulating, and secreting systems appear to be in a sort of equilibrium; the chest is larger, and the lungs more voluminous; the circulation is more rapid; the arterial predominance is obvious; the pulse is sharp, frequent, and regular; the complexion is ruddy; all the vital actions are extremely easy; and the health is rarely altered.

The mental functions correspond. The conception is quick; the memory is prompt; the imagination is lively; the judgment has more readiness than depth and extent; the mind, easily affected by the impressions of outward objects, passes rapidly from one idea to another; the tastes, propensities, appetites, passions, are equally ephemeral; and there is much activity, but the strength is soon exhausted.

In persons of this temperament, the countenance is animated; the hair is fair, and inclining to chestnut; the shape is good; the form is softened, though distinct; and the muscles are of tolerable consistence, and moderate development. The whole appearance is generally so amiable, that this temperament may be called that of health, beauty, and happiness.

In the women who present the attributes of their sex with the greatest unity, we distinguish, especially during youth and adult age, the traits of the sanguine temperament, which may be regarded as the most suitable to the organization of woman.



## CHAPTER XIV.

### THIRD SPECIES OF BEAUTY.—BEAUTY OF THE THINKING SYSTEM.

IN woman, the organs of sense are proportionally larger, and the sensibility is more quick and delicate than in man.

Hence, also, the mental quickness and delicacy of woman are greater. Her perceptions succeed with rapidity and intenseness; and the last of them generally predominates. In well organized women, accordingly, the forehead and the observing faculties are peculiarly developed.

The general nervous system of woman is likewise far more mobile than that of man.

Beauty of the thinking system in woman depends especially upon these fundamental facts, and those tendencies of structure, which thus distinguish her from man.

In the woman possessing THIS SPECIES of beauty, accordingly, the greater development of its upper part gives to the head, in every view, a pyriform appearance;—the face is generally oval;—the high and pale forehead announces the excellence of the observing faculties;—the intensely expressive eye is full of sensibility;—in the lower features, modesty



and dignity are often united;—she has not the expanded bosom, the general plumpness, or the beautiful complexion of the second species of beauty;—and she boasts easy and graceful motion, rather than the elegant proportion of the first.—The whole figure is characterized by intellectuality and grace.

This species of beauty is less proper to woman, —less feminine, than the preceding. It is not the intellectual system, but the vital one, which is, and ought to be most developed in woman.

This species of beauty is tolerably well illustrated in Plates XII., XIII., and XIV.—For all inferiority to what these might be, the difficulty, or rather the impossibility, of procuring proper persons at the Life-academy, will fully account. A more suitable subject would, in general, be less plump, and would present outlines more elegant and delicate.

#### FIRST VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

In woman, the nervous extremities appear to be larger than in man; a pulpy appearance is more remarkable in them; and the papillæ in which they terminate, appear to have less rigidity.

The organs of sense are proportionally larger, and more delicately outlined. There is indeed in woman more development in the organs of sensation than in that of understanding, reasoning, and judging; whilst the contrary is the case in man. The sensations, accordingly, are in woman more acute, and their minute differences are more easily discerned. Man reflects more than he feels: woman always feels more than she reflects.

The FIRST MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species



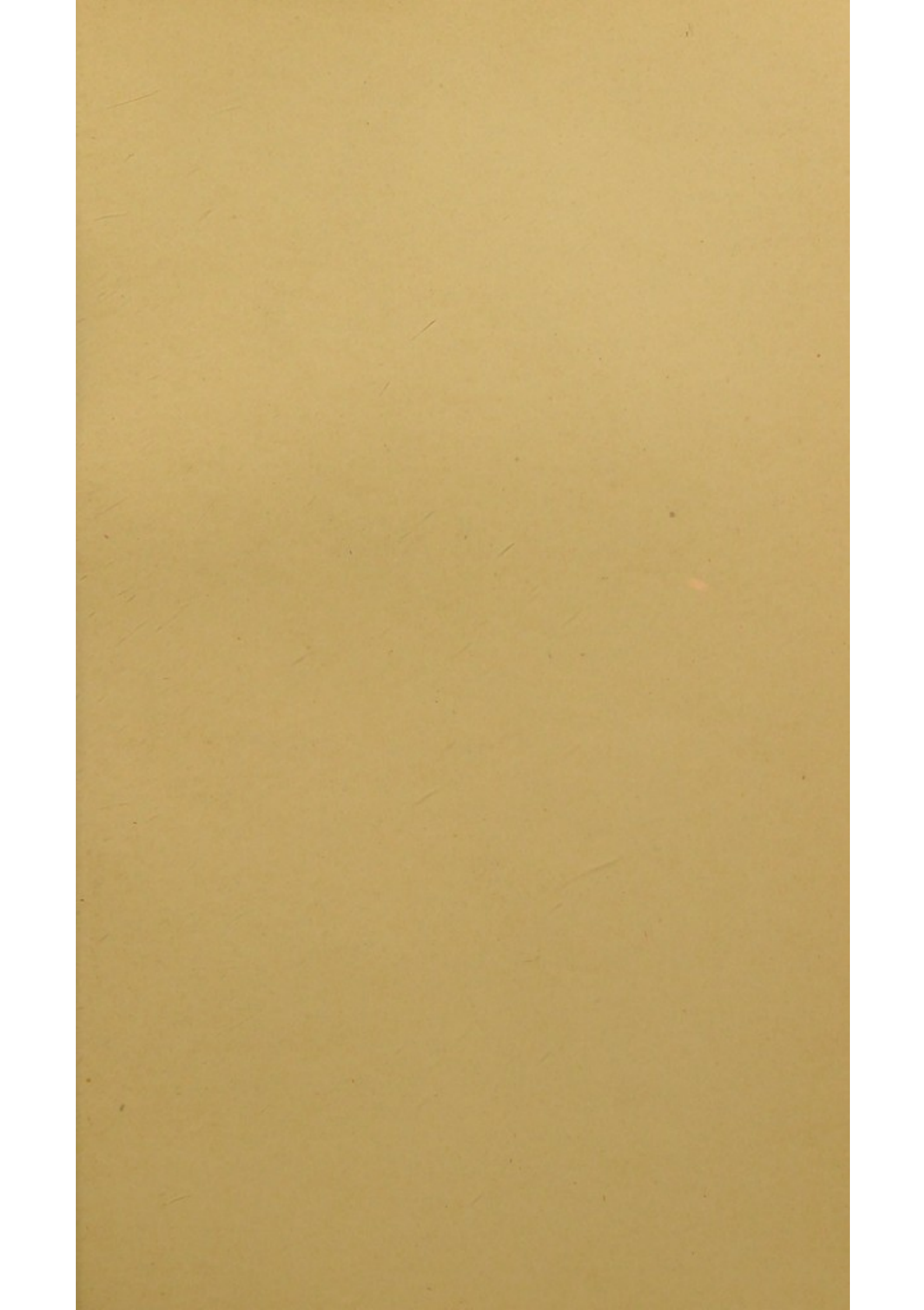


PLATE XII.











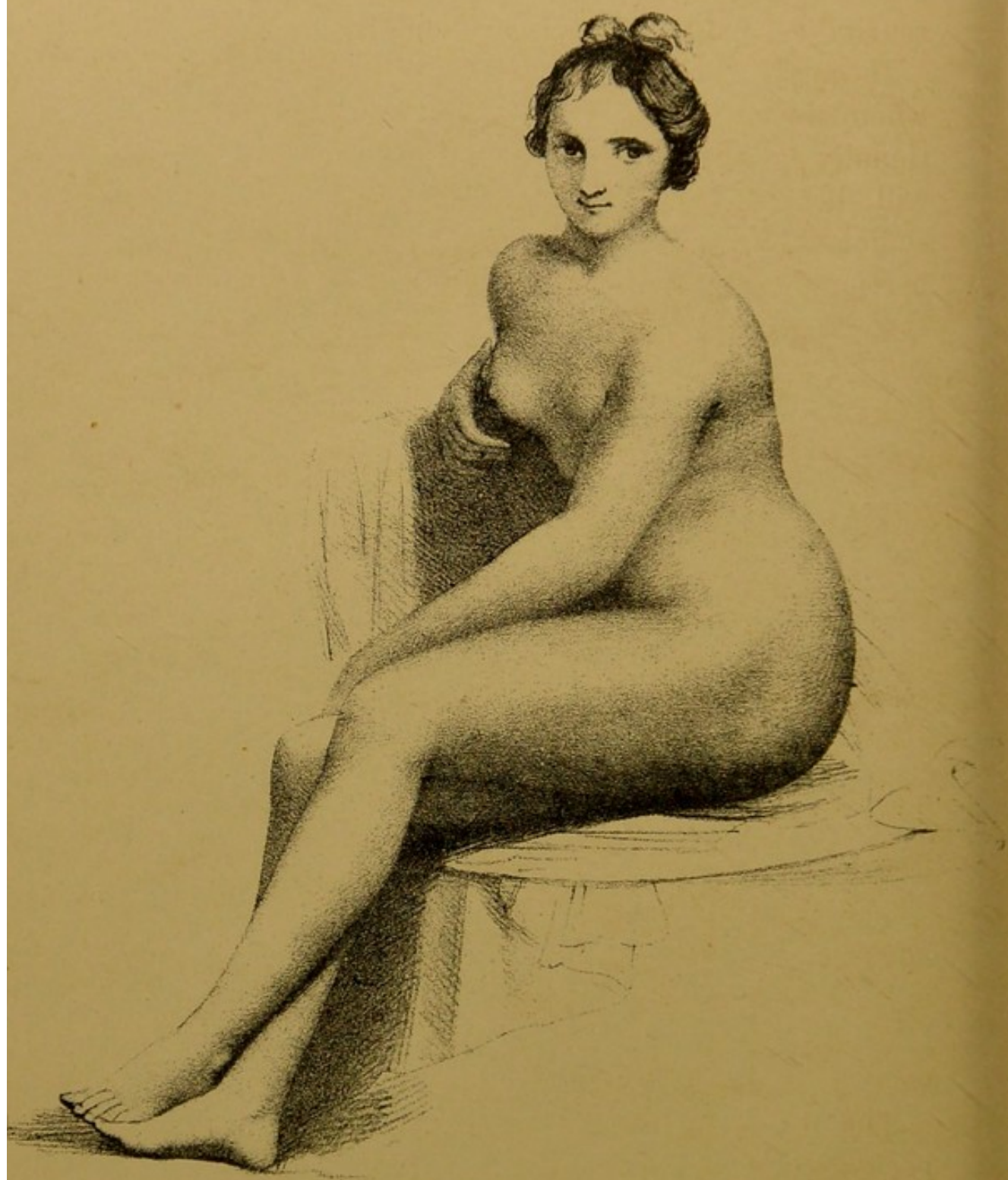


PLATE XIII.



of beauty, is that in which the development of the organs of sense is proportionally large, and the sensibility greater.

It ought to be observed, that though, in woman, when well organized, the whole head is proportionally less than in man, yet the organs of sense will be found to be proportionally larger. This sufficiently indicates the importance of such proportional development. Upon it, indeed, depend that increased sensibility and quickness of observation, which are essential to the female character.

#### SECOND VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

Of all parts of the brain in woman, when well formed, the forehead, especially, is found to be large. Without this, she would have sensibility without observation, a most unhappy condition of the nervous system.

In woman, the brain partakes of the softness of all the other parts of her structure. The cellular tissue which covers it, and which descends between its convolutions, is more abundant, mucous, and loose.

The mind, correspondingly, is more impressed by any new object of thought; the whole nervous system is more extensively affected by impressions on the brain; the propensity to emotion is stronger, and women are more habitually under its influence.

The intimate connexion of the thinking, with a peculiar modification of the reproductive faculties, inspires into woman the want of maternity, which is more powerful than life, and which renders her capable of every sacrifice. Associated with this, are her affection, tenderness and compassion.



Upon the whole, sensibility in woman is greater than understanding; the involuntary play of the imagination, than its regulated combinations; and passion, generally of the gentler kind, than resolve or determination. She has, therefore, more finesse and activity, than depth or force of thought; and her nervous system is also more frequently deranged by accidents unknown to man.

As the calvarium forms the superior and posterior part of the head, and contains the brain, its degree of development indicates corresponding cerebral capacity, and excellence of intellectual faculty. The conformation of this part is, therefore, of great importance in the analysis of beauty.

The extent of the brain, anteriorly, is measured by the different degrees of the opening of an angle, which Camper has called the facial angle; and so far it is favourable to woman well conformed; but it gives no notion of the magnitude of the brain superiorly, posteriorly, or laterally.

The brain of woman, however, in general, extends a good deal posteriorly as well as anteriorly, though it narrows in the former of these directions; and, to the proportional length thus acquired, is owing that intensity in her functions, which I have just described. Superiorly, centrally, and laterally, the brain of woman is generally much less than that of man; and hence the want of elevation, depth, and endurance in her mental faculties.<sup>1</sup>

Upon the whole, the brain of woman is less than that of man, and it is especially less in its superior, central, and, intellectually considered, more important portions.

<sup>1</sup> See the causes of this explained in my work on "Physiognomy."







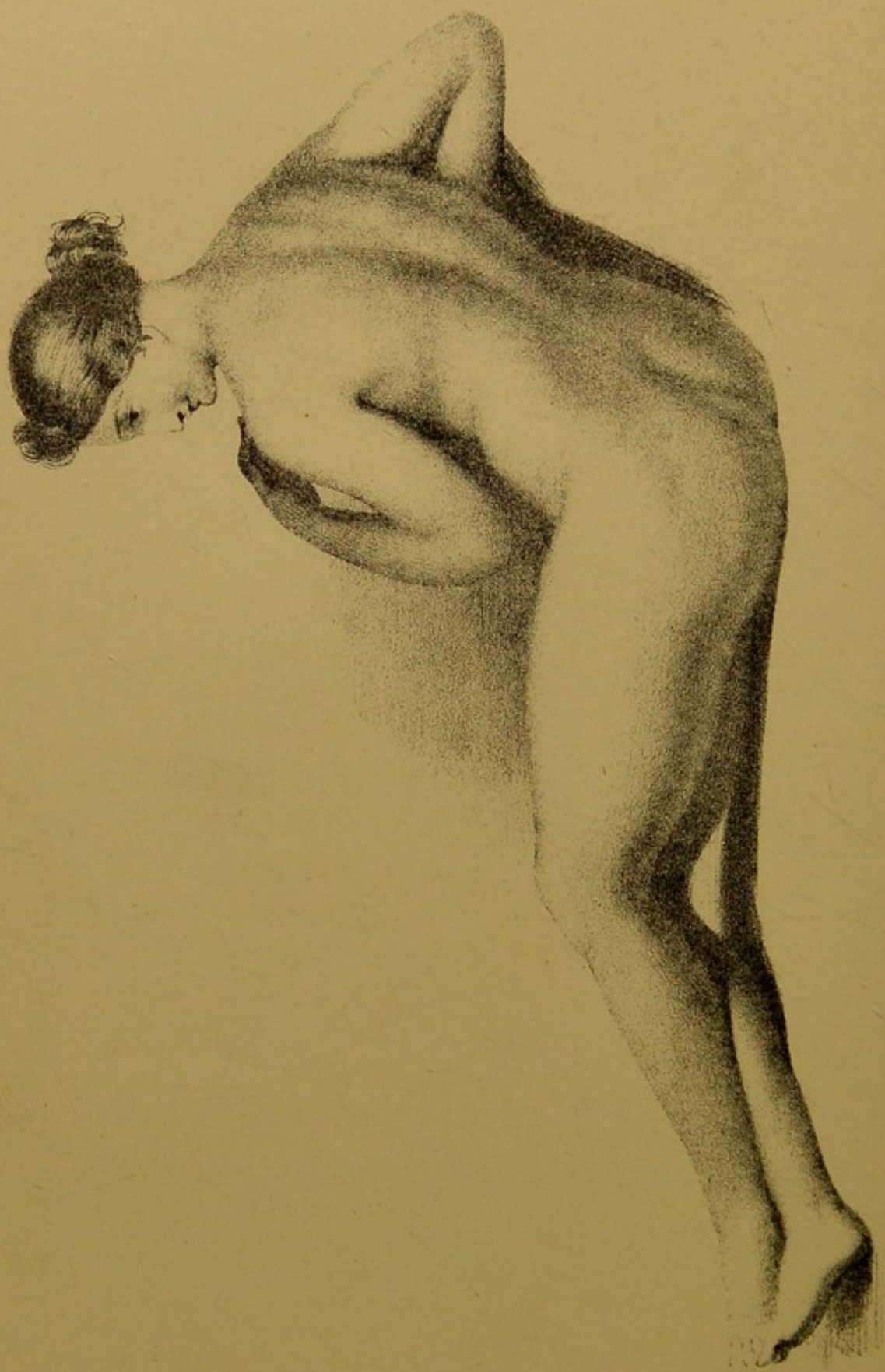


PLATE XIV.



The SECOND MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty, is that in which the development of the brain is proportionally small. This is an evident corollary from what we have just stated as to the first modification of this species ; for it is not possible that the organs of sense should be proportionally large, without the rest of the head being proportionally small.

This is not quite conformable with the wishes of phrenology ; but we must leave any dispute between that art and nature to its own issue. A Venus, moreover, with a small, yet beautifully proportioned head, is often seen to be the mother of a boy who has a large head ; the difference of sex causing a vast modification and difference of development.

#### THIRD VARIETY OR MODIFICATION OF THIS SPECIES OF BEAUTY.

From what has been already said, it may be concluded that, in action or conduct, women are less guided by intellect, and are more biassed by feeling and emotion ; and it may also be concluded that all their movements to fulfil the purposes of feeling and emotion are made in a manner more easy and more prompt, though less sustained. This is increased by the ready obedience of the muscular fibre, and the relative shortness of the stature.

This more easy and less forcible action is perfectly conformable physically with the small and elongated form of the cerebel, or organ of the will, in woman ; as it is morally with the part which woman performs in life, and her desire to please, while it is that of man to protect and to defend.

Conformably with the smaller size of the cerebel,



and especially with its smaller breadth (the influence of which is explained in the work last referred to), the disposition of woman to sustained exertion, whether mental or bodily, is much less; and hence the character "*varium et mutabile semper fœmina*."

It is, then, the prompt and easily affected sensibility of woman, not her understanding, or force of mind, which renders her so eminently fit to be interested in infancy, which enables her to surmount maternal pains by the sentiment of affection and pity, and which makes agreeable to her the cares and the details of housekeeping; and it is this which sometimes renders nothing too irksome or too painful for a mother, a wife, or a mistress, to endure.

Hence, the constitution of woman is perfectly adapted to these functions; hence her existence is more sedentary than man's; hence she has more gentleness of character than he; and hence she is less acquainted with great crimes.

The THIRD MODIFICATION, therefore, of this species of beauty is that in which the development of the cerebel or organ of the will, as well as the muscles which it actuates, is proportionally small.

The situation of this considerable organ is in the back and lower part of the head, and may be pretty accurately indicated by saying, that a line passing through it would complete, posteriorly, a longer line passing backward from the nose through the lower part of the ear.

When this organ, which is that of the will, is high, and more especially when it is large, a determination and force seem to be given by it to the character, which render it the reverse of feminine.



Having spoken here of the ready exercise of the will in woman, and its adaptation to her wish to please, it seems to be here that some circumstances dependent on these should be noticed.

With this ready exercise of the will and desire to please, are evidently connected the light carelessness, the graceful ease, and the gentle softness which add so much to the power of beauty. Hence artists give to woman the bending form which associates so well with all her characteristics; for all feel, with Hogarth, that undulating lines are more or less formed in all movements executed with the intention of expressing sentiments of courtesy, respect, benevolence, or love.

But it is grace that we must especially consider here—grace which directly emanates from this ready exercise of the will and desire to please, especially when combined with observing faculties so perfect and so perpetually active as those of woman.

“Gracefulness,” says Burke, “is an idea not very different from beauty; it consists in much the same thing. . . . Gracefulness is an idea belonging to posture and motion. In both these, to be graceful, it is requisite that there be no appearance of difficulty; there is required a small inflexion of the body; and a composure of the parts in such a manner as not to encumber each other, nor to appear divided by sharp and sudden angles. In this ease, this roundness, this delicacy of attitude, and motion, it is that all the magic of grace consists, and what is called ‘*je ne sais quoi*.’ ”

It is not in these mere physical qualities, that all the magic of grace consists, which, in the state of Burke’s knowledge, he might indeed well call



"je ne sais quoi"! Let the reader hear what is said on this subject by a man who could look a little deeper than Burke, and who owed no fame to the little art of substituting a flash of words for depth of thought, and serving by it a venal purpose as little as the art itself.

"What grace," says Smith, "what noble propriety do we not feel in the conduct of those who exert that recollection and self-command which constitute the dignity of every passion, and which bring it down to what others can enter into! We are disgusted with that clamorous grief, which, without any delicacy, calls upon our compassion with sighs and tears, and importunate lamentation. But we reverence that reserve, that silent and majestic sorrow, which discovers itself only in the swelling of the eyes, in the quivering of the lips and cheeks, and in the distant, but affecting address of the whole behaviour. It imposes the like silence upon us; we regard it with respectful attention, and watch over our whole behaviour, lest, by any impropriety, we should disturb that concerted tranquillity which it requires so great an effort to support." This is eloquence indeed.

Allison duly appreciates this earliest definition of grace. "It is," he says, "this 'recollection and self-command,' which in such scenes constitute what even in common language is called the graceful in behaviour or deportment; and it is the expression of the same qualities in the attitude and gesture, which constitutes, in my apprehension, the grace of such gestures or attitudes. . . . Wherever, in the movements of the form, self-command or self-possession is expressed, some degree of grace at least



is always produced. . . . Whenever in such motions grace is actually perceived, I think it will always be found to be in slow, and, if I may use the expression, in restrained or measured motions.

“The motions of the horse, when wild in the pasture, are beautiful; when urged to his speed, and straining for victory, they may be felt as sublime; but it is chiefly in movements of a different kind that we feel them as graceful, when, in the impatience of the field, or in the curvetting of the manege, he seems to be conscious of all the powers with which he is animated, and yet to restrain them, from some principle of beneficence or of dignity. Every movement of the stag almost is beautiful, from the fineness of his form and the ease of his gestures; yet it is not in these or in the heat of the chase that he is graceful: it is when he pauses upon some eminence in the pursuit, when he erects his crested head, and when, looking with disdain upon the enemy who follows, he bounds to the freedom of his hills. It is not, in the same manner, in the rapid speed of the eagle when he darts upon his prey, that we perceive the grace of which his motions are capable. It is when he soars slowly upwards to the sun, or when he wheels with easy and continuous motion in airy circles in the sky.

“In the personification which we naturally give to all inanimate objects which are susceptible of movement, we may easily perceive the influence of the same association. We speak commonly, for instance, of the graceful motions of trees, and of the graceful movements of a river. It is never, however, when these motions are violent or extreme, that we apply to them the term of grace. It is the gentle waving



of the tree in slow and measured cadence which is graceful, not the tossing of its branches amid the storm. It is the slow and easy winding which is graceful in the movements of the river, and not the burst of the cataract, or the fury of the torrent.

“It is only in the perfection of the human system; in the age when the form has assumed all its powers, and the mind is awake to the consciousness of all the capacities it possesses, and the lofty obligations they impose, that the reign of physical grace commences; and that the form is capable of expressing, under the dominion of every passion or emotion, the high and habitual superiority which it possesses, either to the allurements of pleasure or the apprehensions of pain. It is this age, accordingly, which the artists of antiquity have uniformly represented, when they sought to display the perfection of grace, and when they succeeded in leaving their compositions as models of this perfection to every succeeding age.”

---

It is evidently the UNION of all that is good in the varieties now described which renders beauty, in the thinking system, perfect.

This is well illustrated in the Minerva of the Giustiniani Gallery, which, in this respect, is scarcely the less valuable because it is draped, for it is the head that ever bears the greatest impress of intellectuality.—See Plate XV.

This union is by no means perfect in the English female head, although, from the considerable development of the forehead and the moderate one of the backhead, the general form of that head is beautiful. As to the French female head, a Frenchman, writing





PLATE XV.







under the name of Count Stendhal, scruples not to say, "The form of the head in Paris is ugly; the cranium approaches to that of the ape; and this occasions the women to have the appearance of age very early in life." The women of Paris differ not, in this respect, from those of France generally. Nearly all have the character here described.

It is under this species that the *nervous temperament* falls, which is constituted by great sensibility and corresponding mobility, and therefore belongs to the *first and the last of those varieties*; a temperament chiefly to be found among women.

This temperament scarcely exists in the athletic, is weak in the phlegmatic, is moderate in the sanguine, and is rather active in the bilious.

It is characterized by the smallness and emaciation of the muscles, the quickness and intensity of the sensations, and the suddenness and fickleness of the determinations.

It is seldom natural, but commonly depends on a sedentary and inactive life, on a diseased condition of the brain produced by reading works of imagination, and on habits of sensual indulgence. In conformation of this, we are told that the Roman ladies became subject to nervous affections only in consequence of those depraved manners which marked the decline of the empire; and that these affections were extremely common in France in the licentious times preceding the fall of the corrupt and corrupting monarchy.

Another partial view falling under this species, and properly under the *second variety* is the *cerebral temperament*, which results from the energy and influence of the brain.



This temperament, being thus determined by an excess in the power of the brain, has been called the temperament of genius. When it is increased by education and habits, the other organs are generally more feeble.

In woman, the cerebral temperament is more particularly characterized by a predominance of imagination, which is evidently dependent on the organization which has already been described.

It has been truly observed, that to contribute to the perfection of reason as well as to the preservation of health, the brain ought to be exercised and developed in every direction ; that the mere exercise of memory carried too far renders persons foolish ; that the predominance of imagination disposes to nervous affections, and even to alienation ; that meditation alters the digestive functions ; and that the dry and minute contention which business requires, disposes, when joined to a defect of exercise (and I suspect to the vinous excesses in which men of business indulge), to apoplexy and to paralysis.



## CHAPTER XV.

### BEAUTY OF THE FACE IN PARTICULAR.

"It is probable," says Dr. Pritchard, "that the natural idea of the beautiful in the human person has been more or less distorted in almost every nation. Peculiar characters of countenance, in many countries, accidentally enter into the ideal standard. This observation has been made particularly of the negroes of Africa, who are said to consider a flat nose and thick lips as principal ingredients of beauty, and we are informed by Pallas that the Kalmucs<sup>1</sup> esteem no face as handsome which has not the eyes in angular position, and the other characteristics of their race. The Aztecs of Mexico have ever preferred a depressed forehead,<sup>2</sup> which forms the strongest contrast to the majestic contour of the Grecian busts: the former represented their divinities with a head more flattened than it is ever seen among the Caribs, and the Greeks, on the contrary, gave to their gods and heroes a still more unnatural elevation."

Knowing, as the reader now does, what constitutes the worth, the dignity, and the beauty of the various

<sup>1</sup> Pallas—Voyages en Sibirie.

<sup>2</sup> Humboldt's Political Essay on the Kingdom of New Spain.



organs, this statement tends to show the value of that standard of beauty which we owe to the Greeks. I proceed to illustrate it in regard to the FACE.

The beauty of the human countenance is described by various writers, as including the beauty of form, in the various features of the face; the beauty of colour, in the shades of the complexion; the beauty of character, in some distinctive and permanent relations; and the beauty of expression, in some immediate and temporary feeling.

In regard to the form of the face, considered as a whole, the opening of the facial angle of Camper, in measuring geometrically the extent of the upper part of the head, marks the development of the brain or organ of thought, and shows the proportion which it bears to the middle and lower part of the face, or to the organs of sense and expression.

This development of the upper part of the head contributes essentially to beauty, by giving to the whole head that pyriform appearance already described, by which in every view it is larger at the superior part, diminishes gradually as it descends, and terminates by the agreeable outline of the chin.

In the most beautiful race of men, the facial angle extends to eighty-five degrees, acquiring an increase of ten degrees above the inferior varieties; the face is diminished; the eyes are better placed; the nose assumes a more elegant form; and all appearance of muzzle vanishes.

In the Greek ideal head, the development presenting a facial angle of ninety degrees, confers the highest beauty of the form of the head, the majesty of the forehead, the position of the eyes upon a line which divides the face into two equal



parts, the elegant projection of the nose, the absence of all tumidity of the lips.—But of that, in the sequel.

In the face, generally, as observed by Winckelmann, beauty of form depends greatly upon the profile, and particularly on the line described by the forehead and nose, by the greater or less degree of the concavity or declivity of which, beauty is increased or diminished. The nearer the profile approaches to a straight line, the more majestic, and, at the same time, softer, does the countenance appear, the unity and simplicity of this line being, as in everything else, the cause of this grand, yet soft harmony.

The face being the seat of several organs, each must be examined in its turn.

Winckelmann observes, that “A large high FOREHEAD [an excess, in this respect,] was regarded by the ancients as a deformity.” And “Arnobius says, that those women who had a high forehead, covered a part of it with a fillet.”<sup>1</sup> The reason of this will afterwards be pointed out.

The sense of TOUCH resides in all parts of the face, but especially in the lips. It is most perfect, however, at the tips of the fingers.

A thinner skin permits to the touch of woman more vivacity, delicacy, and profoundness. It seizes the details which generally escape the touch of man. It is more easily hurt by hard, rough, and angular, cold or hot, bodies.

Hence woman requires vestments which are light

<sup>1</sup> “Una fronte spaziosa ed alta aveasi dagli antichi in conto d’una deformità.”—*Storia delle Arti*. “Arnobio c’ insegna, che quelle femmine, che avevano la fronte alta, se ne cingevano una porzione con una fascia.”—*Monumenti Inediti*.



and smooth; and she enjoys more than man the pleasure of reposing on flocculent substances which softly resist her pressure.

In the face, the lips are peculiarly the organ of touch.

Of all the organs of sense, the mouth admits, I believe, of the greatest beauty and the greatest deformity. Considered in repose, nothing certainly is more lovely than this organ when beautifully formed in a beautiful woman. And in action, during speech, the simplest words passing through it receive a charm altogether peculiar.

The mouth ought to be small, and not to extend much beyond the nostrils; a large mouth and thick lips are contrary to beauty. The curve of the upper lip is said to have served as a model to the ancient artists for the bow of Love. The lower lip should be most developed, rounded and turned outward; so as to produce, between it and the chin, that beautiful hollow which assists so much in giving the latter a more perfect rotundity. Both, but especially the upper, should become thin toward the angles of the mouth.

Although we see many lips without evident and offensive defects, there are very few of them really beautiful; and indeed it is only persons of great delicacy and of refined taste who attach the highest value to perfect beauty of the lips.

Lips of beautiful form and of vermilion hue, teeth which are small, equal, slightly rounded, white, clean and well arranged, and a pure breath, are the circumstances which constitute a beautiful mouth.

The sense of TASTE is more delicate and more exquisite in woman than in man. She accordingly seeks for savours which are less rough and irritating than those which are agreeable to him.



The NOSE is the most prominent and conspicuous feature of the face; it is the central fixed point around which are arranged all its other parts: and it is thus essential to the regularity of the features. When these, moreover, are in action, the nose, by its immobility, marks the degree of change which they undergo, and renders intelligible all the movements produced by admiration, joy, sadness, fear, etc.

To perfect beauty of the nose, it is necessary that it should be nearly in the same direction with the forehead, and should unite with that part, without leaving more than a slight inflexion to be seen. This constitutes the Greek profile; and the various degrees of deviation from it constitute, as to this organ, the various degenerations from beauty the most consummate to ugliness the most disgusting.

Nature, says Winckelmann, is sparing of this beauty both in burning climates and in frozen regions.<sup>1</sup>

The same writer says, "The flat compressed nose of the Calmucks, Chinese, and other distant nations, is also a defect, because it destroys the harmony of forms, according to which all the other parts are constructed: nor is there any reason why nature should compress and hollow it, instead of continuing the straight line begun in the forehead."<sup>2</sup> The fact is

<sup>1</sup> It is remarkable that, in infants, the nose is almost always flat, and that, in some members of the same family, it always remains so, while, in others, it rises. This is attended by difference of function.

<sup>2</sup> "Tale è pure il naso compresso e simo de' Calmucchi, de' Cinesi, e d' altre lontane nazioni, poichè guasta l' armonia delle forme, secondo la quale tutte le altre parti sono costruite: nè scorgesi ragione alcuna, per cui la Natura abbia dovuto comprimerlo e incavarlo, anzichè continuare la linea retta in cominciata dalla fronte."—*Storia delle Arti*.



true ; the reasoning false, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter, to which this point properly belongs.

Under the influence of passion, the nostrils expand and are drawn upward ; and these two motions are the only ones of which the lower and moveable part of the nose is capable.

The sense of smell, like that of taste, is more delicate and more exquisite in woman than in man. Woman accordingly enjoys more, and suffers more, by that sense than man does ; and its influence is said to dispose her more than man to those pleasures which have remarkable relations to that sense.

The beauty of the EYE, magnitude and elongated form contribute more perhaps than colour : if its form be bad, no colour will render it beautiful. In woman, however, the most beautiful eyes, in relation to colour, are those which appear to be blue, hazel, or black. But no colour of the eye is beautiful without clearness in every part.

“The more obliquely, and at an angle to each other,” says Winckelmann, “that the eyes are placed, as in cats, the more their position is removed from the base, or from the fundamental lines of the human face, which form a cross that divides it into four parts, the nose dividing it perpendicularly into two equal parts, and the eyes dividing it horizontally. When the eyes are placed obliquely, they form an angle with a line parallel to that which we suppose to pass through their centre. And this indeed is doubtless the reason why it displeases us to see a mouth which goes awry, because it generally offends the eye to see two lines diverging from each other without any reason. Thus eyes placed obliquely, as may be seen sometimes amongst ourselves, and commonly amongst



the Chinese, Japanese, and in Egyptian heads, are an irregularity and a deformity."<sup>1</sup>

Here, again, Winckelmann's fact is true, and his reasoning false, or rather, perhaps, superficial. The real cause of the deformity of obliquely placed eyes is, that the vital parts of the head preponderate. The cavities of the upper jaw, which open into the internal nose, are, in the Mongolic races so large, that they raise the cheek-bones, throw the orbit upward at its lateral part, and encroach apparently upon the space which should contain a nobler organ, the brain. The causes assigned by Winckelmann are but consequences of this.

The eyelids in woman, when well formed, present the gentlest inflexions. The eye-lashes, when long and silky, form a sign of gentleness, and sometimes of softness. The eye-brows ought to be furnished with fine hairs, arched and separated: if they are too thin, they do not sufficiently protect the organ of sight; if they unite they render the physiognomy sombre: their too marked approximation, and their extreme separation, are real deformities.

<sup>1</sup> "Quanto più inclinati, e posti ad angolo fra di loro sono gli occhi, come ne' gatti, tanto più la loro posizione s' allontana dalla base ossia dalle linee fondamentali del volto umano, che formano una croce la quale lo divide in quattro, tagliando in due parti eguali perpendicolarmente il naso, ed orizzontalmente gli occhi. Se questi sono inclinati vengono a far angolo con una linea parallela a quella che si suppone passare pel loro centro. E questa è pur senza dubbio la cagione per cui dispiace il vedere una bocca che va un po' di traverso, poichè generalmente ripugna all' occhio il vedere due linee, delle quali una dall' altra diverga senza ragione. Per tanto gli occhi obbliquamente posti, che presso di noi pur talora s' incontrano, e che si vedono ne' Cinesi e ne' Giapponesi come sulle teste egiziane, sono un' irregolarità e un difetto."—*Ibid.*



The sense of sight in woman is rapid and active ; yet, in her, the slow and languid motion of the eye is generally employed, and is more beautiful than a brisk one. Woman requires a mild light, and colours of moderate vividness, rather than otherwise.

The beauty of the EAR is too little regarded. To an experienced eye it presents great beauties, and great deformities, in form, magnitude, and projection.

The size and prominence of the ear, which characterize several nomadic tribes, are contrary to beauty, not merely because they alter the regularity of the oval of the head, and surcharge its outline with prominences, but because they are in themselves ugly, indicating rather the coarse strength common to inferior animals than the delicacy to be found in man.

In woman, the ear is also more delicate, more sensible, but more feeble than in man. Strong sounds, loud noises, which may be agreeable to the ear of man, are offensive to her. She prefers soft and tender, gay or pathetic music, to every other ; and whatever may be the perfection of her musical education, she also prefers sweet and tender melody to the most complicated Slavonic harmony.

Such are the organs of sense or those of impression, which form the first and most important portion of the face of woman.—The organs of expression, the MUSCLES of the face, on the contrary, are feeble in her ; and correspondingly feeble and rounded are the bony points to which they are attached.

Woman presents very little prominence of the frontal sinuses ; the cheek-bones display beautiful curves ; the edges of the alveoli containing the teeth are much more elliptical than in man ; and the chin



is softly rounded. Of the chin, it should be observed that it is a distinctive character of the human species, and is not found in any other animal. When well formed, it is full, united, and generally without a dimple; and it passes gently and almost insensibly into the neighbouring parts. In woman especially, the chin ought to be finely rounded; for when projecting, it expresses, owing to its connexion with muscular action and power, a firmness and a determination which we do not wish to discover in her character. "The apparent convexity of the cheeks," says Winckelmann, "which in many heads appears greater than natural, contributes to this rotundity: it is not, however, ideal, but taken from natural beauty."<sup>1</sup>

The muscles of the face express all the shades of emotion and passion, not because such expression is the primary, or the proper, object of their motion, but because their various motions adapt the organs to the further purposes required of them in consequence of preceding impressions; and these motions become expressive to us only because we are thus enabled to infer the feeling and purpose of the person in whom they occur. This is a fundamental principle of physiognomy; and its not being understood has led to many of our errors in that science.

In woman, the countenance is more rounded, as well as more abundantly furnished with that cellular and fatty tissue which fills all the chasms, effaces all the angles, and unites all the parts by the gentlest

<sup>1</sup> "A una sì fatta rotondità contribuisce l'apparente convessità delle mascelle, la quale sebbene in molte teste sembra maggiore del naturale, non è però ideale, ma presa dalla più bella natura."—*Monumenti Inediti*.



transitions. At the same time, the muscles are feebler, more mobile, resigned for a shorter time to the same contraction, and as inconstant as the emotions and passions which their rapid play expresses.

The result of all this is, that the muscles do not profoundly modify the face, which consequently has not so much of permanent character as that of man, and which permits us more difficultly to discover, through the rounded, soft, and shifting parts, the nature of her various feelings. As, however, the abundance of the cellular tissue diminishes with age, and as the sentiments become at the same time less ephemeral, the physiognomical character and expression of woman become more decided.

As to COLOUR of the face, it may be observed that the forehead, the temples, the eyelids, the nose, the upper part of the superior lip, and the lower part of the inferior lip, ought in woman to be of a beautiful and rather opaque white. The approach to the cheeks and the middle of the chin ought to have a slight tint of rose colour, and the middle of the cheeks ought to be altogether rosy, but of a delicate hue.—Cheeks of an animated white are preferable to those of a red colour, although less beautiful than those of rosy hue.

With regard to the HAIR, it may be observed, that sometimes, rising from its bulbs, it turns in irregular rings, and by displaying a forehead rather large, confers a certain sanguine, as well as open, air upon the physiognomy. This, however, is most frequently seen in men, and chiefly in men of exuberant vitality, rather than intellectuality: it indeed depends entirely upon the former.

In other men, and almost always in women, the



hair generally divides in a line extending from the crown to the forehead, and falls over the temples. The line thus formed, uniting with the median line of the face in general, and that of the nose in particular, gives to the whole of the features a peculiar symmetry and beauty.

I have said, already, that symmetry is a characteristic of thinking beings, and I have explained the reason of this. The present case admirably illustrates it. This symmetrical arrangement of the hair bestows an intellectual air; and it well may, for, when natural, it derives its tendency to fall on each side, from the top of the head, either from the general elevation of the calvarium, or from the particular elevation of the forehead, which is characteristic of beauty in woman.

It accordingly announces in the individual higher observing faculties: hence the ancient sculptors never omitted this in their highest personages: hence we find it in the heads of Raffaello and Guido.

“A fair hue, ξανθὸς,” says Winckelmann, “has ever been regarded as the most beautiful; and flaxen coloured hair was assigned to the most beautiful, not only amongst the Gods, as Apollo [χρυσοκόμαν Ἀπόλλωνα, golden haired Apollo] and Bacchus, but also amongst the heroes: Alexander the Great had flaxen hair.”<sup>1</sup> The modern Italians called Cupid ‘Il biondo Dio.’

Having concluded what I have here to say of the parts of the face, I may observe, that the *different effects of the same face*, even in a state of repose, have

<sup>1</sup> “Il color biondo, ξανθὸς, è stato in ogni tempo tenuto pel più bello; e bionde chiome furon date ai più avvenenti non solo fra gli dei, come ad Apollo e a Bacco, ma agli eroi eziandio: Alessandro il Grande avea i capelli biondi.”—*Storia delle Arti*.



often been observed, never explained. I have, however, in another work, shown that the face is composed of motive, nutritive and thinking parts or organs. Now, circumstances bring these variously into action; and the different effects alluded to, in reality depend on the motive, or the nutritive, or the intellectual, expression being at the time, respectively, most apparent, or most attended to by us. The study of this subject, which I have not space here to develop, is of infinite importance to the man of taste, the physiognomist, and the artist. The latter cannot easily excel without understanding it.

Another curious fact, not hitherto observed, is, that though beauty of face is, owing to the power of the vital system, almost universal at a certain age, there is always a *faulty feature*, which the physiognomists may observe, and which ever continues to exaggerate, until it terminate in relative ugliness. Thus we scarcely observe the long upper lip during youth, in some women; and yet it afterwards gives to them the sober grimace of baboons. We admire in youth the spirit of the piercing eye, and aquiline nose in others, to whom these afterwards give the look of so many old hawks. In others, still, we are charmed with the round, rosy and innocent cheeks, which when they become paler and more pendent, confer on them the aspect either of seals or of mastiffs, according to other circumstances of temper and disposition. I could easily trace these, and many more, from youth to middle age, and illustrate them convincingly, by drawings: but I have no room for it here.

Each, indeed, of the subjects of the two immediately preceding paragraphs, is worthy of a volume; for the first is as essential to all judgment



of existing beauty at the instant of its being before us, as the second is to all prescience of what beauty will very soon be—to all who have no love for a leap in the dark.

I add to this chapter but a few words on the very *different organization of the head and face*, and the very different mind, of the Greeks and Romans.

Whoever, for the purpose of comparing the heads of these two nations, may walk into the British Museum, will be struck with the difference between them.

The forehead is almost always rather narrow, and rather high, in the most illustrious Greeks; and this could not so uniformly have been so represented in sculpture, unless it had been so also in fact. This is verified, in the third room of the Townley collection, by the heads of Homer, Hippocrates, Epicurus, Pericles, etc.—by the almost universal conformation of Greek heads, to which there are but few exceptions: Sophocles, in this room, and Demosthenes, in the eleventh, are rather broader.

On the contrary, the forehead, the face, the jaws, are excessively broad, and the cranium is depressed and low, in the Romans,—in Severus, Nero, Caracalla, etc., in the sixth room, and in Tiberius and Augustus, in the eleventh; nor is this owing to the circumstance that these generally were men degraded in feeling or intellect, for nearly the same configuration is found in Trajan, Hadrian, etc., in the fourth, sixth, and other rooms. The faces of the Romans are not less ugly than their heads; and those of their women are absolutely detestable, as may be seen in Faustina, Plautilla, Sabina, Domitia, etc., in the sixth of these rooms.



If further illustration of this be wanting, it may be found in the circumstance that, while the Greeks preferred the rather high forehead, and invented the ideal one; the Romans, on the contrary, preferred a little forehead and united eye-brows. Ovid assures us that the women of his time painted their eye-brows in such a manner, that they might appear to form only one.

In the work so often referred to, I have shown that the intensity of functions is as the length of their organs, and the permanence of functions as the breadth of their organs. No truth can be better illustrated than this is, in the organization and the faculties of the Greeks and Romans. With the higher and larger head of the Greeks was united an intensity of genius, which no other people has yet rivalled; and with the broader head of the Romans, a perseverance, equally obstinate and unfeeling, which has been similarly unrivalled.

A good illustration of the vaunted Roman virtue is recorded in Porcia, the daughter of Cato, the wife of Brutus, who plunged a toilet knife into her thigh, and kept it eight days in the wound, without complaining, to prove to her husband that her courage and her discretion rendered her worthy of entering into the conspiracy which he meditated; and who also destroyed herself by swallowing burning coals when she heard of his defeat. Obstinacy and insensibility were great sources of the crimes either perpetrated, or, by their lying historians, pretended to be perpetrated, under the name of Roman virtue.

---

It would be out of place, here, to enter further into the character and expression of the face. Those









PLATE XVI.



whom these remarks dispose to do so, may refer to the physiognomical work, which I have been so often compelled to allude to, and of which I therefore give the title below.<sup>1</sup> To those who are satisfied neither with the vague, though tasteful inspirations of Lavater, nor with the empirical or unreasoned manifestations of Gall and Spurzheim, but who desire *the assignment of a reason for every ascription of physiognomical character or expression*, that work may afford some satisfaction.

The three species of beauty, as they affect the head and face, are illustrated in Plate XVI.

That the Greeks, either intuitively or reasoned, distinguished the three species of beauty as to the Figure, has been already seen. That they equally did so as to the Face, is shown in Plate XVI.*b*, in which heads of Diana, Venus, and Minerva, respectively present beauty of the Locomotive, Vital, and Mental Systems.

<sup>1</sup> "PHYSIOGNOMY FOUNDED ON PHYSIOLOGY, and applied to various Countries, Professions, and Individuals: with an Appendix on the bones at Hythe—the Sculls of the ancient Inhabitants of Britain, and its Invaders: illustrated by Engravings.—Smith, Elder and Co., Cornhill."



## CHAPTER XVI.

### COMBINATIONS AND TRANSITIONS OF THE THREE SPECIES OF FEMALE BEAUTY.

As to the COMBINATIONS of beauty, it must now be observed, that some one of these species of beauty always characterizes the same individual during every stage of life; and, to the experienced observer, it never is difficult to say which of them predominates. Attention to the preceding principles will render this easy.

It is right to mention here the cause of this general predominance of one species of beauty over the rest. It depends on this, that the slightest original or accidental preponderance of strength in one system above that of the rest, though unobserved at first, leads to a more frequent employment of its functions, and therefore to a more perfect development of its organs, until at last the disproportion between these and those of the other systems becomes characteristic of the individual.

In a truly beautiful woman, none of the systems described can exist in a great degree of degradation; but of the three, the nutritive or vital system is to woman the most essential. In England, from thirty to forty is generally the age of its highest perfection.



It often, however, occurs that two, or even the whole of these species of beauty, are blended in considerable perfection. Plate XVII. presents the three species of beauty in some degree combined, from a living figure; and even so much as this figure presents of locomotive and vital beauty, is not of very frequent occurrence. The locomotive system is well developed in the length and elegance of the limbs; the vital or nutritive system everywhere presents soft forms, and rounds both body and limbs; and the mental or thinking system displays a capability of grace in action, notwithstanding the constrained attitude assumed to conceal the face.

Although there can indeed be no great degree of beauty in which this combination is not more or less the case, yet a union of all the three species of beauty, in the greatest compatible degree, is to be found only in some of those immortal images of ideal beauty, which were created by the genius and the chisel of the Greeks.

Having briefly spoken of these combinations, I may notice also those *combinations which similarly occur among the temperaments*, which, as already said, constitute partial views of the varieties I have been describing.

In relation to a combination of the *phlegmatic* and *nervous* temperament, I may refer to Richerand, who says, that, "among the moderns, the easy Michael Montaigne, all of whose passions were so moderate, who reasoned on every thing, even on feeling, was truly pituitous. But in him the predominance of the lymphatic system was not carried so far, but that he joined to it a good deal of nervous susceptibility."



Of women, more especially, it is observed, that they rarely present examples of the lymphatic temperament, unmodified by nervous mobility; whence come extreme vivacity in the sensations with great feebleness, determinations equally precipitate and unsteady, excited imagination and ephemeral tastes, absolute will, etc.

The *sanguine* temperament is similarly combined with the *nervous* one. Hence the physiologist above quoted says, "that to the extreme love of pleasure, sanguine men join, when circumstances require it [he should have said, in some cases], great elevation of thought and character, and can bring into action the highest talents in every department: the history of Henry IV., of Mirabeau, and others, proves that."

The ancients gave the name of *bilious*, to a temperament in which the sanguineous system is energetic, the pulse strong, hard and frequent, the sub-cutaneous veins prominent, the development of the liver excessive, the superabundance of bile remarkable, the sensibility easily excited yet capable of dwelling upon one object, the passions violent, the movements abrupt and impetuous, and the character inflexible. This is evidently a very compound temperament, and should never have been classed, any more than the two preceding, with the simple temperaments, the athletic or muscular, the phlegmatic or lymphatic, the sanguine, and the nervous, which I have noticed under the heads to which they belong.

In persons of this temperament, the skin is of a yellowish brown, the hair black, the muscles marked, the form harshly expressed. "Bold in the conception



of a project," says Richerand, "constant and indefatigable in its execution, it is among men of this temperament that we find those who, in different ages, have governed the destinies of the world: full of courage, boldness, and activity, they have signalized themselves by great virtues or great crimes, and have been the terror or admiration of the universe. Such were Alexander, Julius Cæsar, Brutus, Mohamed, Charles XII., the Czar Peter, Cromwell, Sixtus V., Cardinal Richelieu [and, he should have added, Buonaparte]. . . . To attain to results of such importance, the profoundest dissimulation and the most obstinate constancy are equally necessary; and these are the most eminent qualities of the bilious."

A still more compound temperament is the *melancholic*, in which disease is added to the bilious temperament, a derangement of the functions of the nervous system, and the diseased obstruction of some one of the organs of the abdomen, so that the nutritive functions are feebly or irregularly performed, the bowels sluggish, the pulse hard and contracted, the excretions difficult, the imagination gloomy, the disposition suspicious.

In persons of this temperament, the skin is of a still deeper hue, and the look uneasy and gloomy. Rousseau and Tiberius are excellent examples of this temperament, as associated with genius and virtue in one, and with truly royal vice in the other. In women, this temperament is rarely so intense as in men.

---

Of the TRANSITIONS of beauty, I have now to observe, that, though one species of beauty always



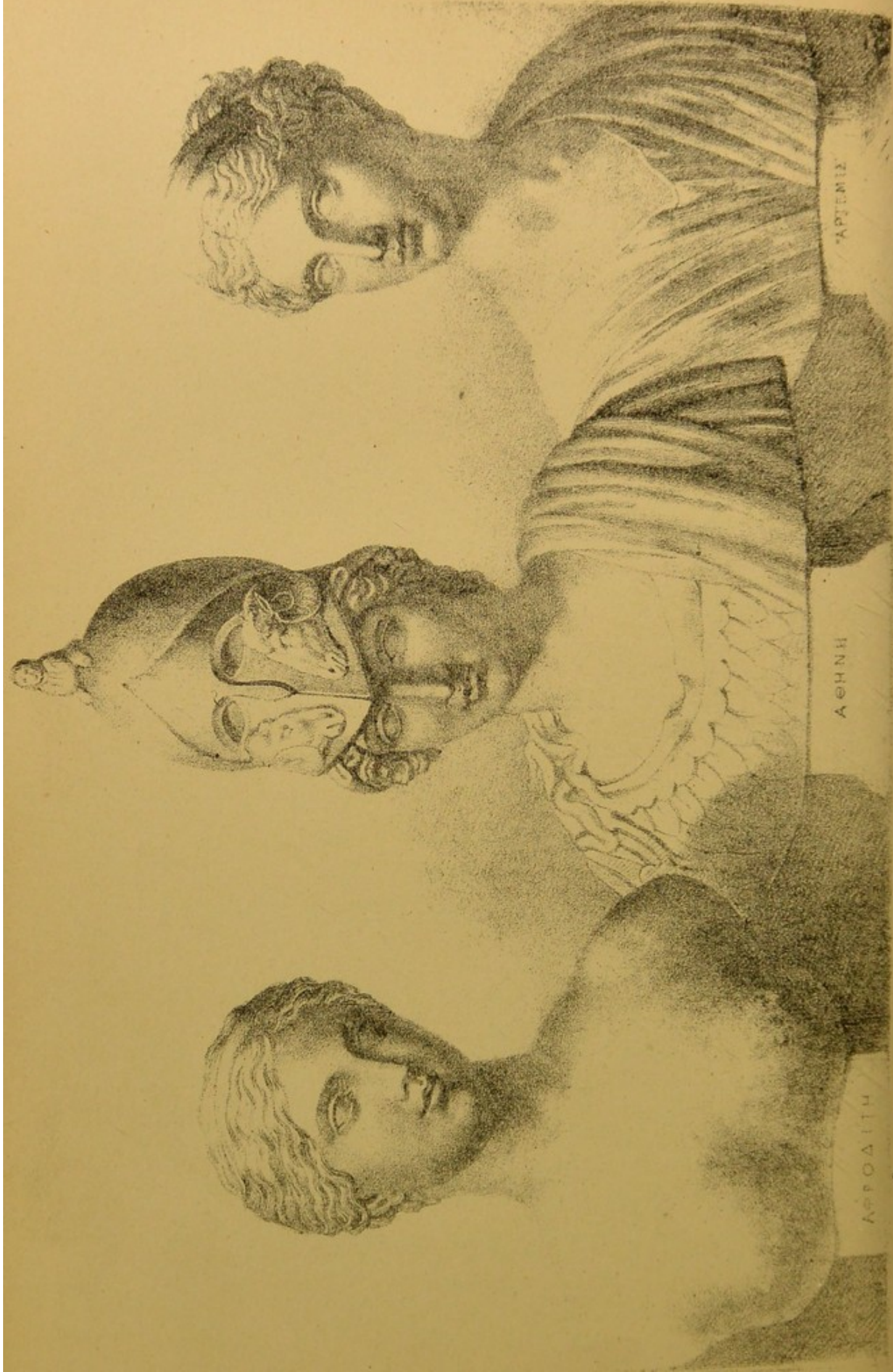
characterizes the same individual during every stage of life, yet it is remarkable that the young woman (whatever species of beauty predominates) has always a tendency to beauty of the locomotive system;—that the middle-aged woman has always a tendency to beauty of the nutritive system;—and that the woman of advanced age has always a tendency to beauty of the thinking system.

Some women would seem, in the progress of life, to pass through all these systems (and the more perfect the whole organization, the more will this seem to be the case); but the accurate observer will always see the predominance of the same system.









ΑΡΤΕΜΙΣ

ΑΘΗΝΗ

ΑΦΡΟΔΙΤΗ



## CHAPTER XVII.

### PROPORTION, CHARACTER, EXPRESSION, ETC.

WINCKELMANN says, "I cannot imagine beauty without the PROPORTION which is always its foundation.—The drawing of the naked figure is founded upon the idea and the knowledge of beauty; and this idea consists partly in measures and relations, and partly in forms, the beauty of which was, as Cicero observes, the object of the first Grecian artists: the latter determine the figure; the former fix the proportions."<sup>1</sup>

The great variety of proportions presented by the human body causes much difficulty in determining with precision what are the best. The difficulty becomes quite insurmountable if we attempt to assign precise dimensions to the details of configuration or to minute parts.

Many circumstances are opposed to the exactness of these measures. Even in the same person, one part is rarely in all respects similar to the corre-

<sup>1</sup> "Non può immaginarsi bellezza senza la proporzione che n'è sempre il fondamento."—"Il disegno del nudo fondasi sulla cognizione e sull'idea del bello; e quest'idea consiste in parte nelle misure e rapporti, e in parte nelle forme, la bellezza delle quali era, al dir di Cicerone, l'oggetto de' primi artisti Greci: queste determinano la figura; quelle ne fissano le proporzioni."—*Ibid.*



sponding part; we are taller in the morning than in the evening; and the proportions change at different periods of life. In different individuals, the differences are still more evident. Moreover, habits, professions, trades, all unite to oppose regularity in the proportions.

It has further been observed that, in the conformation of woman, both as regards the whole and as regards the various parts, nature still more rarely approaches determinate proportions than in man.

It is remarked by Hogarth, whose views I now abridge, that in society we every day hear women pronounce perfectly correct opinions as to the proportions of the neck, the bosom, the hands and the arms of other women, whom they have an interest in observing with severity. It is evident that, for such an examination, they ought to be capable of seizing with great precision, the relation of length and thickness, and of following the slight sinuosities, the swellings, the depressions, almost insensible and continually varying, at the surface of the parts observed. If so, it is certainly in the power of a man of science, with as observing an eye, to go still further, and conceive many other necessary circumstances concerning proportion.

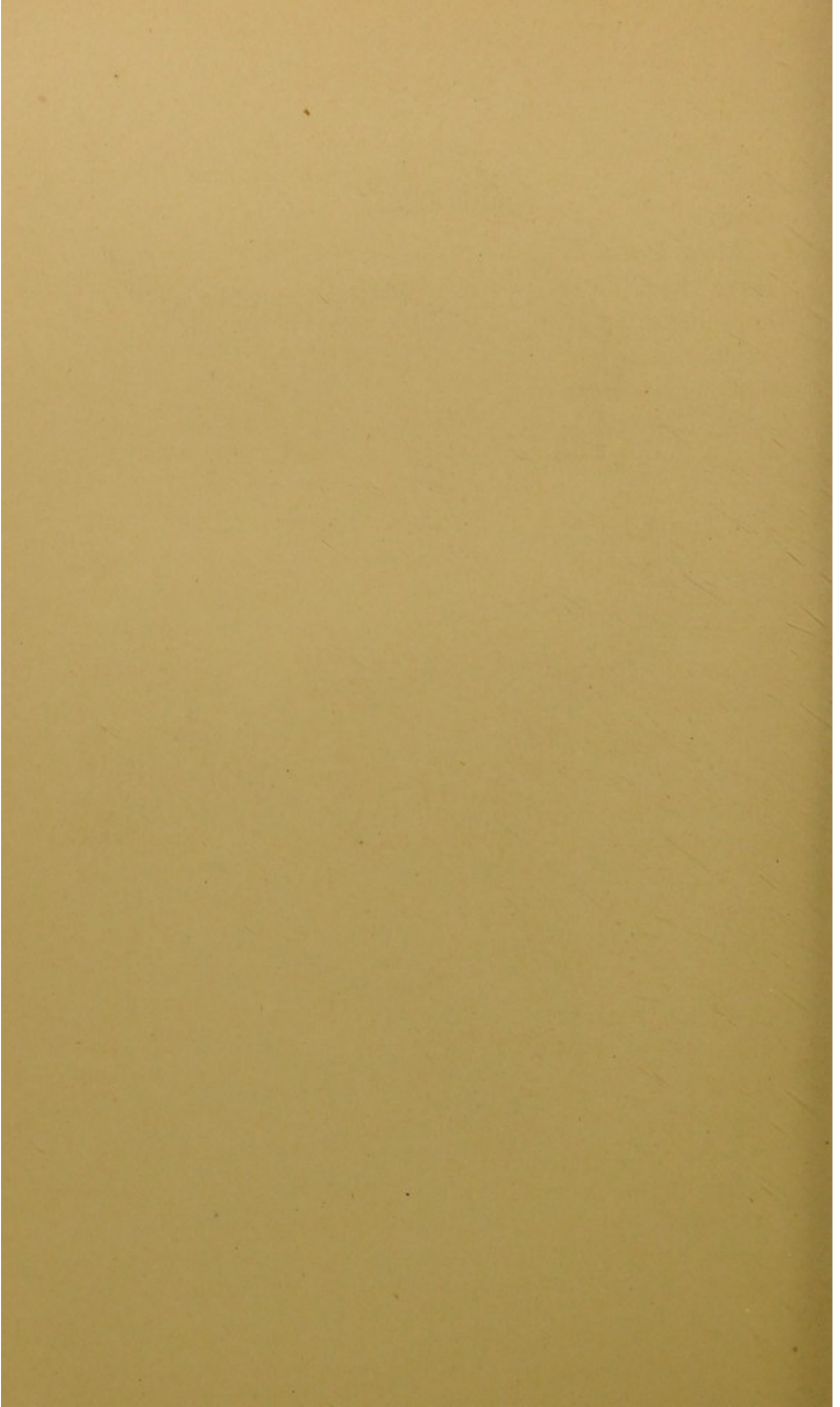
But he says, "though much of this matter may be easily understood by common observation, assisted by science, still I fear it will be difficult to raise a very clear idea of what constitutes or composes the utmost beauty of proportion. . . . We shall soon find that it is chiefly to be effected by means of the nice sensation we naturally have of what certain quantities or dimensions of parts are fittest to produce the utmost strength for moving or sup-





PLATE XVII.







porting great weights, and of what are most fit for the utmost light agility, as also for every degree, between these two extremes."

After some illustrations of this, which naturally leave the method very vague, he adds, "I am apprehensive that this part of my scheme, for explaining exact proportion, may not be thought so sufficiently determinate as could be wished." So that Hogarth's method as to proportions, both general and particular, reduces itself to the employment of the eye and the nice sensation we have of quantities or dimensions.

But the Greek artists had not only done what Hogarth thus vaguely speaks of, but advanced much further; and indeed all that has been done on this important subject belongs rather to the history of art than that of nature.

"It is not," says Buffon, "by the comparison of the body of one man with that of another man, or by measures actually taken in a great number of subjects, that we can acquire this knowledge [that of proportion]: it is by the efforts which have been made exactly to copy and imitate nature; it is to the art of design that we owe all that we know in this respect. Feeling and taste have done all that mechanics could not do; the rule and the compass have been quitted in order to profit by the eye; all the forms, all the outlines, and all the parts of the human body, have been realized in marble; and we have known nature better by the representation than by nature itself. It is by great exercise of the art of design and by an exquisite sentiment, that great statuaries have succeeded in making us feel the just proportions of the works of nature. The



Greeks have formed such admirable statues, that with one consent they are regarded as the most exact representation of the most perfect human body. These statues, which were only copies from man, are become originals, because these copies were not made from any individual, but from the whole human species well observed, so well indeed, that no man has been found whose figure is so well proportioned as these statues: it is then from these models that the measures of the human body have been taken."

It is now necessary to lay before the reader the principles of the Greeks, as to the proportions of the human body. Much has been well done on this subject by Winckelmann, Bossi, and others; but, at the same time, from want of enlarged anatomical and physiological views, they have overlooked some fundamental considerations, and have failed to unravel the greatest difficulties which the subject presents. That the reader may be satisfied of the accuracy of my representations, I shall lay the statements of these writers before him in their own words, rendering them only as succinct as possible; and, as their works are rather scarce and expensive, I shall in general quote the original language at the bottom of the page.<sup>1</sup>

Of the first epoch of art among the Etruscans and Greeks, Mengs says, "They preferred the most necessary things to those which were less so; and therefore they directed their attention first to the muscles, and next to *proportion*, these constituting the two parts the most useful and necessary of the

<sup>1</sup> Of the best works on this subject, those of Mengs alone, I believe, have been translated; but the translation is so inaccurate as to be worthless.



human form; and this is, throughout, the character of their primitive taste. All this we observe in history, and in the divine and human figures which they have represented.<sup>1</sup>

“In these figures,” he further observes, “we find a proportion, impossible to be known and practised, without an art which furnishes sure *rules*. These rules could not be founded otherwise than in proportion, which was invented and practised by the Greeks.”<sup>2</sup>

In this, Flaxman agrees, when he says, “it must not be supposed that those simple geometrical forms of body and limbs, in the divinities and heroes of antiquity, depended upon accidental choice, or blind and ignorant arbitration. They are, on the contrary, a consequence of the strict and extensive examination of nature, of rational inquiry into its most perfect organization and physical well-being, expressed in outward appearance.”

“That the Greeks,” says Bossi, “wrote much on this subject [their doctrine respecting symmetry,] we have ample evidence in Pliny, Vitruvius himself, Philostratus the younger, and others.

“Polycletus did not confine himself to giving a

<sup>1</sup> “Preferivano le cose più necessarie a quelle, che lo erano meno; e quindi mettevano attenzione primieramente ne’ muscoli, e dopo nella proporzione, consistendo in queste due parti il più utile, e il più necessario della forma umana; e questo è il carattere di tutto il loro gusto primitivo. Tutto ciò si osserva nelle storie, e nelle figure divine e umane, che hanno rappresentate.”—*Opere di Antonio Raffaello Mengs*.

<sup>2</sup> “In quelle figure trovasi una proporzione impossibile a conoscersi e a praticarsi senza un’ arte, che dia regole sicure. Queste regole non potevano fondarsi in altro che nella proporzione,” etc.—*Ibid.*



commentary upon this fundamental point, but, in illustration of his treatise, according to Galen, made an admirable statue that confirmed the precepts laid down in the work; and 'The Rule of Polycletus,' the name given to this statue, became so famous for its beauty, that it passed into a proverb to express a perfect body, as we may find in Lucian.

"But of so many writings, which ought at least to equal the works that remain to us, and probably were superior, inasmuch as it is easier to lay down precepts than to put them in execution,—of so many treatises, I say, not a fragment remains [except the few lines of Vitruvius], nor is there, now, any hope that a vestige will be found, unless something may remain for posterity amongst the papyri of Herculaneum."<sup>1</sup>

Now, to approach to the ancients in excellence is quite impossible, until some one shall explain the great principles on which they acted.—Assuredly

<sup>1</sup> "Molto certamente di tale scienza fu scritto dai Greci, come ne abbiamo ampie testimonianze in Plinio, in Vitruvio stesso, in Filostrato juniore ed in altri.

"Policleto non si accontentò di dare un commentario di questa facoltà, ma, per testimonio di Galeno, ad illustrazione dello scritto fece una mirabile statua che confermava i precetti in esso scritto contenuti; e il Canone di Policleto, nome che a quella statua si diede, divenne sì famoso per la sua bellezza, che passò in proverbio per esprimere un corpo perfetto, come possiamo vedere presso Luciano.

"Ma di tanti scritti che dovevano per lo meno pareggiare in eccellenza le opere che ci rimangono, e che probabilmente, perchè è più facile il dar precetti che operare, le avranno superate, di tanti scritti, dico, non, ci rimane frammento, nè è da sperare ormai che se ne trovi vestigio, se pure qualche cosa non esistesse pei posteri fra e papiri Ercolanesi."—*Delle Opinioni di Leonardo da Vinci intorno alla Simmetria de' Corpi Umani.*



they are, in some of the most important respects, unknown at present. Servile imitation will never answer the purpose; and to learn as the ancients did, and reach perfection, perhaps, in as many ages, is not very rational, when we can avail ourselves of their practice to discover their principles. I will, in this chapter, endeavour to point out some of these principles in the practice of art, as I have already done in the general theory of beauty.

“It is probable,” says Winckelmann, “that the Grecian artists in imitation of the Egyptians, had fixed, by well-determined rules, not only the largest, but even the very smallest proportions, and the measure of the length proper to every age and to every kind of contour; and probably all these rules were learnt by young persons, from books that treated of symmetry.”<sup>1</sup>

These rules, we know, were of three kinds—numerical, geometrical, and harmonic; and we shall see, in the sequel, that the loss of them has been much deplored. It is not a little curious, however, that the numerical and geometrical methods are, in some measure, actually practised even at the present day, and that the harmonic method (the loss of which has caused the greatest confusion) is easily deducible from anatomical and physiological principles, as I shall endeavour to show.

As to the NUMERICAL METHOD, it is evidently that

<sup>1</sup> “E’ probabile che e Greci, artisti, ad imitazione degli Egizj, abbiano su ben determinate regole fissate non solo le più grandi, ma eziandio le più piccole proporzioni, e la misura della lunghezza e larghezza propria ad ogni età e ad ogni qualità di contorni; e tutte queste leggi verosimilmente s’imparavan dai giovani su i libri, che trattavano della simmetria.”—*Storia delle Arti*.



of which Vitruvius has preserved some notions, and which is at present practised by artists.

“As it is the painter’s business,” says Bossi, “to imitate a great variety of human bodies, and as the difference of parts in beautiful bodies is generally slight, and becomes, as it were, imperceptible, in the most usual imitations less than life, Leonardo perceived it was necessary for the artist to use a general measure for the purpose of preparing historical compositions quickly. He required that the figure to be employed should be carefully selected on the model of some natural body, the proportions of which were generally considered beautiful.—This measure, he required, should be employed solely for *length*, and not for width, which requires more evident variety.”<sup>1</sup>

“It has been observed,” says Flaxman, “that Vitruvius, from the writings of the most eminent Greek painters and sculptors, informs us that they made their figures eight heads high, or ten faces, and he instances different parts of the figure measured according to that rule, which the great Michael Angelo adopted, as we see by a print from a drawing of his.”

<sup>1</sup> “Siccome avviene al pittore d’imitare i corpi umani a centinaia, e siccome ne’ corpi belli le differenze delle parti per lo più sono piccole, e diventano poi quasi impercettibili nelle più comuni imitazioni minori della grandezza naturale, Leonardo riconosceva essere necessario al pittore l’adoprarne una misura generale, specialmente per l’uso privato di preparare con prontezza le composizioni delle istorie. Volea però che l’elezione della figura in che far abito, fosse fatta con grandi avvertenze sopra la regola di un corpo naturale, il quale comunemente fosse di proporzione laudabile.—Voleva ancora che questa misura fosse unicamente usata per le lunghezze e non per le larghezze, nelle quali esige più sensibile varietà.”—Bossi, *Lib. Cit.*



Winckelmann, however, shows that the foot served the Greeks as a measure for all their larger dimensions, and that their sculptors regulated their proportions by it, in giving six times its length, as the model of the human figure. Vitruvius says, "*Pes vero altitudinis corporis sextæ.*"

"The foot," says Winckelmann, "which among the ancients was used as the standard of measures of every magnitude, (for a given measure of fluids was also called by this name), was very useful to sculptors in fixing the proportions of the body, and with reason; for the foot was a more determinate measure than that of the head or face, of which the moderns generally make use. The ancient artists regulated the size of their statues by the length of the foot, making them, according to Vitruvius, six times the length of the foot. Upon this principle, Pythagoras determined the height of Hercules, by the length of the feet with which he measured the Olympic stadium at Elis.

"This proportion of six to one between the foot and the body, is founded upon experience of nature, even in slender figures: it is found correct, not only in the Egyptian statues, but also in the Grecian; and it will be discovered in the greater part of the ancient figures where the feet are preserved."<sup>1</sup>

"We would not omit mentioning," says Bossi,

<sup>1</sup> "Il piede, che presso tutti gli antichi prendesi per norma nelle misure d'ogni grandezza, cosicchè con questo nome chiamavasi anche una data misura de' fluidi, era di molt' uso agli statuarj per fissare le proporzioni del corpo, e con ragione; poichè il piede ha una misura più determinata che non ha la testa o 'l volto, di cui si valgono generalmente i moderni. Gli antichi artisti dalla lunghezza del piede determinavano la grandezza delle loro statue, e davan loro,



“the erroneous opinion of those who esteem the feet of females beautiful in proportion to their smallness. The beauty of the feet consists in the handsomeness and neatness of their shape, not in their being short, or extremely small: were it otherwise, the feet of the Chinese and Japanese women would be beautiful, and those of the Venus de Medici frightful.”<sup>1</sup>

Such, then, is evidently the numerical method of the ancients.—Of the GEOMETRICAL METHOD, we have many illustrations.

A man standing upright, with his arms extended, is, as Leonardo da Vinci has shown, enclosed in a square, the extreme extent of his arms being equal to his height. This is evidently the most general measure of the latter kind.

Of the latter kind, also, is Camper's ellipsis for measuring the relative size of the shoulders in the male, and the pelvis in the female.

So also is the measure from the centre of one mamma to that of the other, as equal to the distance from each to the pit over the breast-bone.

secondo il testimonio di Vitruvio, sie lunghezze di piede. Su questo principio Pittagora determinò la grandezza d' Ercole dalla misura de' piedi coi quali avea misurato lo stadio Olimpico in Elide.

“Tale proporzione di sei ad uno tra 'l piede e 'l corpo, fondasi sulla sperienza naturale, eziandio nelle figure svelte: si ravvisa esatta non solamente nelle statue Egiziane, ma ben anche sulle Greche; e troverebbesi nella maggior parte delle antiche figure, se loro si fossero conservati i piedi.”—*Storia delle Arti*.

<sup>1</sup> “Non è da lasciarsi inavvertita l' erronea opinione di coloro che estimano tanto più belli i piedi femminili quanto più sono piccioli. La bellezza de' piedi sta nella leggiadria e concindità della forma, non nell' esser corti o estremamente piccioli; chè se fosse diversamente, sarebbero bellissimi i piedi delle donne Cinesi e Giapponesi, e mostruosi quelli della Venere de' Medici.”—*Lib. Cit.*



We now approach the chief difficulty, which evidently formed a stumbling block even to Leonardo da Vinci,—that HARMONIC METHOD which, strange as it may appear, will be found to afford rules that are at once perfectly *precise*, and yet infinitely *variable*. The apparent impossibility indeed of such a rule seems to have embarrassed every one. And the statement which Bossi makes in regard to Leonardo da Vinci, in this respect, is exceedingly interesting.

“He thought,” says Bossi, “but little of any general measure of the species; and that *the true proportion* admitted by him, and acknowledged to be of difficult investigation, is solely *the proportion of an individual in regard to himself*, which, according to true imitation, should be *different in all the individuals of a species*, as is the case in nature. Thus, says he, ‘*all the parts of any animal should correspond with the whole*; that which is short and thick, should have every member short and thick; that which is long and thin, every member long and thin; and that which is between the two, members of a proportionate size.’ From this and other precepts, it follows, that, when he speaks of proportion, he is to be understood as referring to the *harmony of the parts of an individual*, and not to the general rule of imitation in reference to dimensions.”<sup>1</sup> How clearly (notwithstanding the error as to *all* being

<sup>1</sup> “Ei non faceva gran conto delle misure generali delle specie, come di cosa di lieve discorso; e che la vera proporzione de lui ammessa e riconosciuta di difficile investigazione, è unicamente la proporzione di un particolare riguardo a sè stesso, la quale, secondo la retta imitazione, debb’ essere diversa in tutti i particolari d’ una specie, siccome avviene nella natura. Così, dic’ egli, tutte le parti di qualunque animale sieno corrispondenti al suo tutto: cioè che



short and thick) does this point to the harmonic method of proportion forthwith to be explained.

“It would seem he felt within himself that he did not reach the perfection of those wonderful ancients of whom he professed himself the admirer and disciple.

“It became, therefore, Leonardo’s particular care and study to approach as nearly as he could to the ancients in the true imitation of beautiful nature under the guidance of philosophy.

“But whether from want of great examples, or from not sufficiently penetrating, as he himself thought, into these artifices, or from comprehending them too late, he modestly laments that he did not possess the ancient art of proportions. He then protests that he has done the little he was able to do, and asks pardon of posterity that he has not done more. Such are the sentiments that Platino exhibits in the following epitaph:

Leonardus Vincia (sic) Florentinus  
Statuarius Pictor que nobilissimus  
de se parce loquitur.

Non sum L’ysippus ; nec Apelles ; nec Policletus ;  
Nec Zeuxis ; nec sum nobilis ære Myron.  
Sum Florentinus Leonardus Vincia proles ;  
Mirator veterum discipulusque memor.  
*Defuit una mihi symmetria prisca : peregi*  
Quod potui : veniam da mihi posteritas.

“It is evident that these sentiments are quel che è corto e grosso, deve avere ogni membro in sè corto e grosso ; e quello che è lungo e sottile, abbia le membra lunghe e sottili ; e il mediocre abbia in sè le membra della medesima mediocrità. E con questo e con altri precetti fa scorgere che, allorchè ei parla di proporzioni, si debbe intendere ch’ei ragioni della modulazione delle parti di un individuo anzi che di una norma generale dell’imitazione per ciò che spetta alle misure.”—*Ibid.*



not to be attributed to the imagination of the poet."<sup>1</sup>

Bossi, having no glimpse of the great principles for which Leonardo sought in vain, says, "Since then, this great man could not satisfy himself in the difficult task of dimensions, whilst on other points he seems to dread no censure, it should give us a strong idea of the difficulty of determining the laws of beautiful symmetry, and preserving it in works with *that harmony which is felt, but cannot be explained, and which varies in every figure according to the age, circumstances, and particular character of each.*

"And when we recollect that, though Leonardo sought successfully in Vitruvius the proportions which Vitruvius himself seems to have drawn from the Greeks, he yet lamented that he did not possess the ancient symmetry, it is easily seen that he did not mean by this science, as already stated, a determinate general measure for man, but *that harmony of parts which is suited to each individual, according to the respective circumstances of sex, age, character,*

<sup>1</sup> "Sembra che dentro di sè sentisse di non giungere alla eccellenza di que' meravigliosi antichi, de' quali si protestava ammiratore e discepolo.

"Era poi cura e studio speciale di Leonardo di avvicinarsi per quanto poteva agli antichi nella vera e bella imitazione della natura colla scorta della filosofia.

"Però, o fosse la mancanza de' grandi esemplari, o non ne penetrasse, secondo ch' egli credeva, abbastanza gli artifizj, o che troppo tardi giungesse a comprenderli, egli lagnavasi modestamente di non aver posseduto l' antico magistero delle proporzioni. Si protestava poi d' aver fatto il poco che aveva potuto, e chiedeva perdono alla posterità, se non aveva fatto di più. Ecco i sentimenti che il Platino espose nell' epitaffio che qui trascrivo, [as above].

"Ognun vede che sensi sì fatti non si possono attribuire all' invenzione del poeta."—*Ibid.*



*and the like.*"<sup>1</sup>—Again, how clearly does this point to the harmonic method of proportion to be presently explained!

"But," Bossi proceeds, "how difficult it is to combine the beautiful and elegant, with easy and harmonic measures, may be judged from the vain attempts of many otherwise ingenious men, as I will here relate for the benefit of artists. The difficulty will be still more evident if we reflect how arduous a task it is to make the proportions that the Greeks denominated numerical, harmonic, and geometrical agree together, and to apply them, thus agreeing, to the formation of rules and measures of a visible object so various in its component parts as the human body."<sup>2</sup>—In despair, Bossi tries to show its absolute impossibility!

<sup>1</sup> "Or dunque questo non contentarsi di sì grand' uomo nell' ardua materia delle misure, mentre nel resto non pareva temere l' altrui censura, ci debbe dare una grande idea della difficoltà di determinare le leggi della bella simmetria, e di conservarle nelle opere con quell' armonia che si sente, ma che non si spiega e che varia in ogni figura secondo l' età, gli accidenti e i caratteri particolari di ciascheduna.

"E quando finalmente si rifletterà che quantunque Leonardo con sì buon esito indagasse in Vitruvio le misure che Vitruvio stesso sembra aver tratte dai Greci, lagnavasi nondimeno di non aver posseduto la vera antica simmetria, si comprenderà bene che per questa scienza egli non intendeva, come già accennai, una determinata misura generale dell' uomo, ma quella commodulazione di parti che a ciaschedun individuo conviene secondo le rispettive circostanze di sesso, di età, di carattere e simili."—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> "Ma quanto questa forma bella e leggiadra sia difficile a combinarsi con misure facili ed armoniche, si può giudicare dai vani sforzi di tanti uomini d' altronde ingegnosi, che qui mi piacque a comodo degli artefici raccogliere. Tale difficoltà diventerà poi più evidente, allorchè si rifletterà quanto è ardua cosa l' accordare fra loro le tre porzioni che gli antichi distinguevano, la numerica,



“In the second place, to penetrate completely the natural reason of the proportions of the human body, would require a knowledge of physics, which it is not in man's power to obtain. The universal equilibrium of the numerous constituent parts of the human machine, every one of which eminently attains the end for which it was destined, without interrupting the course that every other part takes to its respective end, in which true proportion seems to consist, is more easily stated than understood. And even if an artist could arrive at such a knowledge of man as to be able, so to speak, to compose him, he would have done but little, because he would have made but one man. By the alteration of only one of the infinite parts that compose the human frame, the equilibrium and respective relation of the others are necessarily altered: in short, each separate individual would be the subject of a totally new study.<sup>1</sup>

l' armonica e la geometrica, e l' applicare tale accordo a formar regole e misure di un oggetto visibile sì vario nelle parti che lo compongono, qual è il corpo umano.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>1</sup> “In secondo luogo, il penetrare compiutamente la ragion naturale delle proporzioni umane esigerebbe una conoscenza della fisica che all' uomo non è dato di ottenere. L' equilibrio universale delle infinite parti costituenti la macchina umana, ciascuna delle quali ottenga eminentemente il fine cui è destinata senza interrompere il corso che ogni altra parte ha al suo fine rispettivo, in che pare consistere la vera proporzione, è cosa da dirsi più che da intendersi. E quando anche si giungesse a conoscere sì fattamente l' uomo, che si potesse, direi quasi, comporlo, imitando, esattamente il composto naturale, si sarebbe ancor fatto poco, perchè, si sarebbe fatto un uomo solo. Una sola delle infinite parti che il composto umano costituiscono, che si debba alterare, l' equiponderanza e rispettiva relazione delle altre rimangono necessariamente alterate; in breve ogni uomo separatamente sarebbe subietto di tutta una nuova scienza.”—*Ibid.*



“Every human habit, of whatever nature it may be, has an influence over the human figure, and from the indefinable variety and incalculable mixture of such habits, there results an infinite variety of figures. Thus it is evident that true general proportions cannot be laid down without violating nature, which it is the object of art to imitate.”<sup>1</sup>—If, by “general proportions,” Bossi here means proportions applicable to all or to a great number, he completely loses sight of the object of the great man on whose opinions he comments; for he sought *a rule for the harmony of parts in each distinct individual*.

Again, Bossi abandons, as impossible, the finding of the harmonic rule, which was the great object of Leonardo.—“From what has been said, we may finally conclude that large proportions only can be established, and that placing too much confidence in measures, retards, rather than favours the arts.

“It was written of Raphael, and is seen, that he had as many proportions as he made figures. Michael Angelo did the same, and it was his saying, that he who had not the compasses in his eye, would never be able to supply the deficiency by artificial means. Vincentio Danti, who treasured the doctrine of Michael Angelo, asserts in his work, that the proportions do not fall under any measure of quantity. We have seen the infinite exceptions of Leonardo, respecting the measurement of man, and his own few works

<sup>1</sup> “Ogni umana abitudine, di qualunque genere ella sia, influisce sulla forma umana, e dalla varietà indefinibile e dalla incalcolabile mistura di tali abitudini nasce la infinita varietà delle forme. Dunque è evidente che non si possono determinare vere proporzioni generali senza offendere la natura che l’arte vorrebbe pur imitare.”  
—*Ibid.*



confirm it. I speak no more of inferior persons among the moderns; but turning to the ancients, I find that the proportions of every good statue are different.”<sup>1</sup> —And this will be found conformable to the harmonic rule.

“And speaking generally of works in relieve, what canons can determine the largeness or smallness of some parts, so as to obtain a greater effect, according to the circumstances of light, distance, material, visual point, etc.? Certainly none.”<sup>2</sup> This was not to be expected from the rule sought for.

“I shall deem that I have gained some recompense for the toil of wading through so many tedious works, if it shall induce any faith in the advice I now give, namely, ‘That every student of painting should himself measure many bodies of acknowledged beauty, compare them with the finest imitations in painting and sculpture, and from these measures make a canon

<sup>1</sup> “Dal fin qui detto, si debbe per ultimo dedurre che non si possono stabilire che proporzioni grosse, e che il riporre troppo di confidenza nelle misure inceppa l’ arte anzi che favorirla.”—*Ibid.*

“Di Raffaello fu scritto, e si vede che tenne tante proporzioni quante fece figure. Michelagnolo fece lo stesso ed è suo motto che chi non ha le seste negli occhi, non troverà mai artificio con che supplire a tal difetto. Vincenzo Danti che fe’ tesoro della dottrina di Michelagnolo, asserì nel suo libro, che le proporzioni non cadono sotto alcuna misura di quantità. Di Leonardo abbiamo veduto le infinite eccezioni circa il misurar l’ uomo, e le poche sue opere le confermano. Non parlo degli altri minori fra i moderni; e volgendomi agli antichi, trovo che ogni statue lodevole ha proporzioni diverse.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> “E parlando poi in generale delle opere di rilievo, quali canoni potranno determinare la diminuzione o l’ ingrandimento di alcune parti, onde ottenere un migliore effetto secondo le circostanze di luce, di distanza, di materia, di punto visuale e simili? nessuno di certo.”—*Ibid.*



for himself, dividing it in the manner best suited to his genius and memory. If this plan were more generally adopted, art and its productions would both be gainers.'"<sup>1</sup>—It might do so, among as ingenious a people as the Greeks, in as many ages as the same method cost them to do it in! Leonardo da Vinci wanted to abridge the time, instead of beginning again!

Winckelmann as little understands this great man's object, when, after saying, "as the ancients made ideal beauty their principal study, they determined its relations and proportions," he adds "from which, however, they allowed themselves to deviate, when they had a good reason, and yielded themselves to the guidance of their genius."<sup>2</sup>—Why, the whole purpose of the rule sought for was to regulate every possible deviation, as will now be seen.

The harmonic method of the Greeks,—that measure which Leonardo calls the "true proportion," "the proportion of an individual in regard to himself," "which should be different in all the individuals of a species," but in which "all the parts of any animal should correspond with the

<sup>1</sup> "Mi parrà intanto d' aver buon frutto dalla fatica da me fatta in cercare tanti nojosi libri, se ciò darà qualche fede a quanto io sono per consigliare, cioè: Che ogni studente di pittura misuri da sè molti corpi di lodata bellezza, facendone confronto colle più lodate imitazioni di pittura e di scultura, e che da questa misure ricavi un canone suo proprio, diviso a quel modo che più al suo ingegno ed alla sua memoria sia conforme. Se molti seguiranno questo metodo, l' arte guadagnerà e nella scienza e ne' prodotti."—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> "Gli antichi, siccome faceano del bello ideale il loro principale studio, così ne aveano determinati i rapporti e le proporzioni, dalle quali però, quando ne aveano una giusta ragione, s' allontanavano, lasciandosi guidare dal loro genio."—*Storia delle Arti.*



whole," which constitutes "the harmony of the parts of an individual," and which, as Bossi adds, "varies in every figure, according to the age, circumstances, and particular character of each,"—in short, *this method for the harmony of parts in each distinct individual,—this method presenting rules, perfectly precise, and yet infinitely variable*, has, in all its elements, been already clearly laid before the reader, (though not enunciated as a rule,)—in the relative proportions of the locomotive, nutritive, and thinking systems, or, generally speaking, of the limbs, trunk, and head, and in the three species of beauty which are founded on them.

These, it is evident, present to the philosophic observer, the sole means of judging of beauty by harmonic rule, the great object of Leonardo da Vinci's desires and regrets. They present the great features of the Greek method,—if that method conformed to truth and nature, as it undoubtedly did. This will be rendered still clearer by a single example.

Thus, if any individual be characterized by the development of the nutritive system, this harmonic rule of nature demands not only that, as in the Saxon English, the Dutch, and many Germans, the trunk shall be large, but consequently, that the other two portions, the head and the limbs, shall be relatively small; that the calvarium shall be small and round, and the intellectual powers restricted; that the head shall, nevertheless, be broad, because the vital cavities of the head are large, and because large jaws and muscles of mastication are necessary for the supply of such a system; that the neck shall be short, because the locomotive



system is little developed; that it shall be thick, because the vessels which connect the head to the trunk are large and full, the former being only an appendage of the latter; that the lower limbs shall be both short and slender; that the calves of the legs shall be small and high;<sup>1</sup> that the feet shall be little turned out, etc. etc.

So also, if any individual be characterized by the development of the locomotive system, the harmonic rule demands, not only that the limbs shall be large, but, consequently, that the other two portions, the head and the trunk, shall be relatively small; that the calvarium shall be small and long; and the intellectual powers limited; that the head shall be long, because the jaws and their muscles are extended, etc. etc.

So likewise, if any individual be characterized by the development of the thinking system, the harmonic rule demands, not only that the head shall be large, but, consequently, that the other two portions, the trunk and limbs, shall be relatively small; that the head shall not only be large, but that its upper part, the calvarium, shall be largest, giving a pyramidal appearance to the head; that the trunk and limbs, however elegantly formed, shall be relatively feeble, the former often liable to disease, the latter to accident, as we have seen in the most illustrious examples, etc. etc.

It must be borne in mind, however, as already explained, that there may be innumerable combinations and modifications of these characteristics;

<sup>1</sup> Thus it is not correct, as stated by Leonardo, that when some parts are broad or thick, all are broad; though, in peculiar combinations, that may occur.



certain greater ones, nevertheless, generally predominating.

Such, doubtless, was the harmonic method of the Greeks; whether, by them, it was thus clearly founded on anthropology, or not.

It is curious that several writers, and Winckelmann among the rest, should have adopted a triple division of the body—without, however, duly founding it in anthropology. Thus Winckelmann says, “the entire body is divided into three parts, and the principal members are also divided into three. The parts of the body are the trunk, the thighs, and the legs!”<sup>1</sup>—a distribution and division founded neither in nature nor in truth.

That the Greeks were more or less aware of the principles here stated, though their writings have not descended to us, is proved by their idealizations founded upon them.

“If different proportions,” says Winckelmann, “are sometimes met with in any figure, as for example, in the beautiful trunk of a naked female figure in the possession of Signior Cavaceppi, at Rome, in which the body from the naval to the sexual parts is of an uncommon length, it is most probable that such figures have been copied from nature, that is, from persons so formed.”<sup>2</sup>—Nothing

<sup>1</sup> “Il corpo intero dividesi in tre parti; e in tre pur si dividono i membri principali. Le parti del corpo sono il tronco, le cosce, e le gambe.”—*Storia delle Arti*.

<sup>2</sup> “Che se talora s’ incontrano differenti proporzioni in qualche figura, come, a cagion d’ esempio, in un bel torso d’ una figurina muliebre ignuda presso il Signor Cavaceppi in Roma, in cui dall’ umbilico alle parti sessuali passa una distanza non comune, allora deggiam credere che simili figure siano state copiate dal naturale, cioè da persone così formate.”—*Ibid.*



certainly would be better founded in natural tendency than such idealization.

All the three Greek methods of proportion being now before the reader, I must briefly notice other circumstances.

In the head in particular, may be observed CHARACTER, or a permanent and invariable form, which defines its capabilities, and EXPRESSION, or temporary and variable forms, which indicate its actual functions.

The teachers of anatomy for artists have not, that I know of, clearly described the causes of these. I may therefore observe, that as character is permanent and invariable, it depends *fundamentally* on permanent and invariable parts—the bones; and as expression is temporary and variable, it depends on shifting and variable parts—the muscles.

It is well observed by Mengs that, in relation to character, “the peculiar distinction of the ancients is, that from one part of the face we may know the character of the whole.”<sup>1</sup> And, of expression Winkelmann observes, that “the portion which possesses beauty of expression or action, or beauty of both added to the figure of any person, is like the resemblance of one who views himself in a fountain; the reflection is not seen plainly unless the surface of the water be still, limpid, and clear: quiet and tranquillity are as suitable to beauty as to the sea. Expression and action being, in art as in nature, the evidence of the active or passive state of the mind, perfect beauty can never exist in the countenance, unless the mind be calm and free from all agitation,

<sup>1</sup> “Il particolare degli antichi è, che da una parte del viso si può conoscere il carattere di tutto il restante.”—*Opere*.



at least from everything likely to change and disturb the lineaments of which beauty is composed."

Now the details which, during the period of perfection in art, were so skilfully employed, were these very means of expression or circumstances attending and indicating them—minuter forms which are universal, and without which nature is imperfectly represented—minuter forms of the highest order, because the means of expressing intellect, emotion, and passion, if required.

These higher details we find, for instance, in the turn of the inner end of the eyebrow, or constriction and elevation of the under eyelid, or a hundred other traits dependent on subjacent muscles. We find them in slight risings of mere cutaneous parts, when they lie over and are elevated by the attachment of muscles, as at the inner angles of the eyes, the corners of the mouth, and elsewhere. We find them in depressions or furrows, when they are drawn down by contiguous muscles. These are of higher character, because they belong to expression or its means; and there is a corresponding want of completeness, of truth, of nature, without them.

Between these intellectual means, these higher details, and those of a lower order, accidental details, the great artists of Greece distinguished. Accidental details have nothing to do with expression or the means of expression; they depend upon an inferior system, that merely of life, and constitute all the depositions, excrescences, and growths which confuse the vision of the unexperienced, and embarrass that of the most discriminating, in the examination of higher beauty.

These lower details we find, for instance, in the



puffings of adipose substance which project from the spaces between the muscles of the face, and from other accidents of the vital system, as wrinkles or folds from the absence of adipose substance, fulness or emptiness of the vessels, projecting veins, peculiar conditions of the skin, turbidity of the eyes, hairs of the head, beard, or skin, etc. These have always characterized inferior artists and inferior periods of art.

From these observations, it will be seen that such unqualified statements as the following by Azara, lead only to misconception:—"A human face, for example, is composed of the forehead, brows, eyes, nose, cheeks, mouth, chin, and beard. These are the great parts; but each of these contains many other minor parts, which also contain an infinity of others still less. If the painter will content himself to express well the great parts which I have taken notice of, he will have a grand style; if he depicts also the second, his style will be that of mediocrity; and if he pretends to introduce the last, his style will be insignificant and ridiculous."



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE GREEK IDEAL BEAUTY.

ON this important doctrine of art, of which Winckelmann says, "The ideal is as much more noble than the mechanical, as the mind is superior to the body." I shall follow, so far as I can advantageously, the great writers on the subject, in order that the reader may have all the confidence in its recognized portions that authority can bestow, and that he may the better distinguish them from the new views which are here added.

"There are," says Winckelmann, "two kinds of beauty, individual and ideal: the former is a combination of the beauties of an individual; the latter, a selection of beautiful parts from several."<sup>1</sup>

"The formation of beauty was begun from some beautiful individual, that is, from the imitation of some beautiful person, as in the representation of some divinity. Even in the ages when the arts were flourishing, the goddesses were formed from the models of beautiful women, and even from those who publicly sold their charms: such was Theodota, of

<sup>1</sup> "La bellezza è di due specie, individuata, e ideale; la prima è un complesso delle belle forme d'un individuo; e la seconda un estratto di essa preso da più individui."—*Monumenti Inediti*.



whom Xenophon speaks. Nor was any one scandalized at it, for the opinion of the ancients on these matters was very different from ours."<sup>1</sup>

Winckelmann adds, "There is rarely or never, a body without fault, all the parts of which are such that it is impossible to find or draw them more perfect in other persons. The wisest artists, being aware of this . . . did not confine themselves to copying the forms of beauty from one individual . . . but seeking what is beautiful from various objects, they endeavoured to combine them together, as the celebrated Parrhasius says in his discourse with Socrates. Thus, in the formation of their figures, they were not guided by any personal affections, by which we are frequently led, in the pursuit of beauty that pleases us, to abandon true beauty."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "La formazione della bellezza ha cominciato dal bello individuo, cioè dall' imitare una bella persona, anche nel rappresentare qualche divinità. Ne' tempi eziandio, in cui le arti fiorivano, effigiavansi le dee sul modello di belle donne, e di quelle pure che a pubblico comodo vendevan piaceri: tale fu Teodota, di cui parla Senofonte. Nè siavi chi di ciò si scandalizzi, poichè gli antichi su questo proposito pensavano ben diversamente da noi."—*Storia delle Arti*.

But I much doubt his assertion when he says, "La natura ha formato sempre e va formando tutto giorno de' visi comparabili a quante teste della più sublime bellezza veder si possono scolpite ne' marmi, e nelle gemme: anche a dì nostri si veggon vive delle Niobi e degli Apollini Vaticani. Certe teste di deità che a taluno sembran ne possono concepite con l' intelletto astratto dall' osservazione della creatura, e ritratte come per isvergognar ciò di che la natura fa mostra, non saranno per avventura che immagini di persone anticamente vissute; già sappiamo che alcune statue di Venere e di altre dee furon fatte a similitudine sin delle femmine che faceano mercimonio della loro bellezza."—*Monumenti Inediti*.

<sup>2</sup> "V' ha di rado o non mai un corpo senza difetti, e di cui tutte le parti siano tali che in altri corpi ritrovar non se ne possano o figurare almeno delle più perfette. Di ciò persuasi i più saggi



"From the selection of the most beautiful parts and their harmonious union in one figure, arises ideal beauty: nor is this a metaphysical idea, because all the portions of the human figure taken separately are not ideal; but merely the entire figure."<sup>1</sup> And he elsewhere says, "it is called ideal not as regards its parts but as a whole, in which nature can be surpassed by art."<sup>2</sup>

With deeper observations still, he adds that, "though nature tends to perfection in the formation of individuals, yet she is so constantly thwarted by the numerous accidents to which humanity is subject, that she cannot attain the end proposed; so that it is in a manner impossible to find an individual in whom all parts of the body are perfectly beautiful."<sup>3</sup>

artisti . . . non ristringevansi ad un solo individuo per copiare le forme della bellezza . . . ma il bello su varj oggetti ricercando studiavansi di combinarlo insieme, come diceva il celebre pittore Parrasio, ragionando con Socrate. Così nel formare le loro figure non erano diretti da quella inclinazione personale, per cui sovente il nostro spirito, seguendo una beltà che piace, abbandona la vera bellezza."—*Storia delle Arti*.

<sup>1</sup> "Dalla scelta delle più belle parti e dalla loro armonica unione in una figura nasce il bello ideale: nè è già questa un' idea metafisica, poichè ideali non sono tutte le parti dell' umana figura separatamente prese; ma solo deve ideale chiamarsi la figura intera."—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> "Dicesi poi ideale non rispetto alle parti, ma al totale, in cui la natura può esser superata dall' arte."—*Monumenti Inediti*.

<sup>3</sup> "La natura, quantunque nella formazione de' suoi individui tenda al perfetto, trovasi poco meno che quasi sempre impedita dalla materia e da tanti accidenti a' quali è soggetta l' umanità sicchè non possa arrivar al fine ch' ella si propone; talmente che sarà quasi impossibile di trovar uomo alcuno di bellezza finita in ogni sua parte."—*Ibid.*

In his *Storia delle Arti*, Winckelmann says, "Il Bernini considerò come impossibile e sognata la scelta delle più belle parti di cinque avvenenti donne di Crotona, fatta da Seusi quando volle dipingere



It was to the same purport that Proclus had in ancient times said, "He who takes for his model such forms as nature produces, and confines himself to an exact imitation of them, will never attain to what is perfectly beautiful. For the works of nature are full of disproportion, and fall very short of the true standard of beauty. So that Phidias, when he formed his Jupiter, did not copy any object ever presented to his sight, but contemplated only that image which he had conceived in his mind from Homer's description."<sup>1</sup>

In short, while the Greek artists perpetually studied nature, they discovered her best and highest tendencies even in her most perfect forms; their works accordingly present nothing foreign to that which is strictly beautiful; they present not only no inferior forms, but no idle ornaments; and everything in them is accordingly at once simple and sublime.

Barry<sup>2</sup> affords me the means of continuing the view

Giunone, asserendo che le parti e le membra d' un individuo non possono ad altri ben convenire, fuorchè a quello di cui sono proprie." And he properly replies, "Ma in ciò il Bernini s' ingannò, come s' ingannaron tutti coloro i quali negando, come lui, esservi altra bellezza fuorchè l' individua, così ragionarono." Assuredly, however, the painters of modern times, ignorant of the great principles of the Greeks, are incapable of uniting such parts in one harmonic combination.

<sup>1</sup> Lib. II. in *Timæum* Platonis.

<sup>2</sup> This member of the Royal Academy was suspected of having written that "republics had done more for the advancement of the fine arts than monarchies." The late George the Third, who did not approve of truths of that kind, was thereby so much enraged, that he instantly sent for the list of the members of the Academy, and therefrom erased the name of Barry. The academicians humbly submitted to the indignity which hereditary wisdom thus inflicted. It would appear, however, that bad principles are spreading among the Royal Academicians; for the works of this expelled member are now daringly given by them as a prize to students at the Academy!



I now wish to present. "In all individuals," he says, "of every species, there is necessarily a visible tendency to a certain point or form. In this point or form, the standard of each species rests. The deviations from this, either by excess or deficiency, are of two kinds : first, deviations indicating a more peculiar adaptation of certain characters of advantage and utility, such as strength, agility, and so forth ; even mental as well as corporeal, since they sometimes result from habit and education, as well as from original conformation. In these deviations, are to be found those ingredients which, in their composition and union, exhibit the abstract or ideal perfection in the several classes or species of character. The second kind of deviation is that which, having no reference to anything useful or advantageous, but rather visibly indicating the contrary, as being useless, cumbersome, or deficient, is considered as deformity ; and this deformity will be always found different in the several individuals, by either not being in the same part, in the same manner, or in the same degree. The points of agreement which indicate the species, are therefore many ; of difference which indicate the deformity, few."

Barry, however, wrongly says, "Mere beauty, then, though always interesting, is notwithstanding vague and indeterminate ; as it indicates no particular expression either of body or mind."—But it indicates the highest character, the capability of all noble expression, and this is better than its sacrifice to actuality in one.

I am now led to the greater rules which their ideal method suggested to the Greeks. Payne Knight indeed says, "Precise rules and definitions, in matters



of this sort, are merely the playthings or tools of system-builders;" and, unchecked by any recollection of the practical and unrivalled excellence of the founders of these rules, he adds a great deal of narrow-minded and mistaken nonsense upon the subject, never distinguishing between rules in themselves rational, and the stretching of them to utter inapplicability. On this subject, even Reynolds properly observes, "that some of the greatest names of antiquity, and those who have most distinguished themselves in works of genius and imagination, were equally eminent for their critical skill. Plato, Aristotle, Cicero, and Horace; and among the moderns, Boileau, Corneille, Pope, and Dryden, are at least instances of genius not being destroyed by attention or subjection to rules and science."

But the grossest errors on this subject have been committed by Alison, who says, "Artists, in every age, have taken pains to ascertain the most exact measurement of the human form, and of all its parts. . . . If the beauty of form consisted in any original proportion, the productions of the fine arts would everywhere have testified it; and, in the works of the statuary and the painter, we should have found only this sole and sacred system of proportion. The fact however is, as every one knows, that, in such productions, no such rule is observed; that there is no one proportion of parts which belongs to the most beautiful productions of these arts; that the proportions of the Apollo, for instance, are different from those of the Hercules, the Antinous, the Gladiator, etc.; and that there are not, in the whole catalogue of ancient statues, two, perhaps, of which the proportions are actually the same."



Now, I believe, we may say that this original or most perfect proportion is presented in the Apollo, which is not, as generally supposed, an example of *peculiar*, but of *universal*, beauty—the locomotive system presenting as much strength as is compatible with agility, and as much agility as is compatible with strength, and any other modification of either ensuring diminution of power; while the vital and mental systems are equally perfect. Wherever this model is deviated from by the ancient artists, it is *peculiar* beauty, I believe, that is represented.

He further says, “They have imagined also various standards of this measurement; and many disputes have arisen, whether the length of the head, of the foot, or of the nose, was to be considered as this central and sacred standard. Of such questions and such disputes, it is not possible to speak with seriousness, when they occur in the present times.” So also Burke says, “It must be likewise shown, that these parts stand in such a relation to each other, that the comparison between them may be easily made, and that the affection of the mind may naturally result from it.”

Now, no man in his senses ever cared which of these measures was adopted, except as a matter of convenience, or ever imagined that peculiar virtue resided in any of them.

The following are some of the principal rules which, either by intuition or with due definition, resulted from and guided the practice of the ancient Greeks.

First, in regard to the THINKING SYSTEM, when the ancient artists, either from taste or from principle, gave greater opening to the facial angle than  $80^{\circ}$ , they believed that an increase of intelligence corresponded



to that conformation. By increasing the angle beyond  $85^{\circ}$ , they impressed upon their figures the grandest character, as we see in the heads of the Apollo, the Venus, and others whose facial angle extends to or exceeds  $90^{\circ}$ .

In regard to *the forehead*, then, this afforded their rule for distinguishing beings of a superior kind. How well they observed the tendency of nature to increase that angle with the increase of some of the thinking faculties, we now know. This ideal rule was, therefore, admirably founded.

Whoever reflects on the nature of this angle will perceive that its increase tended in no way to raise the forehead, but to throw it forward; and therefore to lengthen the head. This conforms to the metaphor by which a *long head* is used for a *wise head*, and which has not yet given place to a *broad head*, preferred by the German craniologists, in compliment to their own organization.

With regard to the height of the forehead, it has already been observed that it was, among the ancient Greeks, more considerable than its breadth, as may be seen by the busts of their most illustrious men. Still, neither the natural nor the ideal forehead much exceeded the space from the forehead to the bottom of the nose, or that from the nose to the bottom of the chin.

Winckelmann accordingly says, "The forehead to be beautiful should be low [meaning, as his expressions elsewhere show, no higher than the other two spaces just mentioned]; and its lowness was so fixed amongst the ideas of beauty by the Grecian artists, that it serves as a mark to distinguish modern heads from ancient. The reason of this appears founded



in the very rules of proportion, which, as in the whole human body, was amongst the ancients tripartite: thus the face also was divided into three parts; so that the forehead should be of the same length as the nose, and the remainder of the face to the chin of the same length likewise. This proportion was founded on observation, and we may at any time convince ourselves of it in any individual with a low forehead, by covering with a finger the hair at the top of the forehead, so as to render it so much higher, and we shall then see a want of harmony of proportion and how detrimental a high forehead is to beauty."<sup>1</sup>

These views of Winckelmann, the ideal rule which they illustrate, and above all, the actual dimension of the forehead among the philosophers, the poets, and the legislators of Greece, whose genius has been unequalled in modern times, show the folly of the craniological hypothesis. The reason of the ideal rule has not indeed been assigned: it appears to me to be this, that the three parts of the face which, as

<sup>1</sup> "La fronte per esser bella convien che sia bassa; e la bassezza sua si era talmente fissata fra le idee della bellezza, dagli artefici Greci, ch' ella suol essere un distintivo per discernere le teste moderne dalle antiche. La ragione di ciò par fondata nelle massime stesse della proporzione, la quale siccome in tutta la figura umana era stata presso gli antichi tripartita: così tripartita er' ancora stata nel viso; di modo che l' altezza della fronte fosse uguale alla lunghezza del naso; e quindi altrettanta altezza avesse il viso sino all' estremità del mento. Questa proporzione fu stabilita dell' osservazione, e noi pure possiamo con essa chiarircene a nostro talento in alcuna persona di fronte bassa; coprendole con la larghezza di un dito le radici de' capelli sopra la fronte, per figurarcela quel tanto più alta; e allora scopriremo, per dir così, la disarmonica dissonanza della proporzione, e quanto pregiudichi alla bellezza la fronte alta."

—*Monumenti Antichi.*



I have shown both here and in my work on Physiognomy, are respectively connected with ideas, emotions, and passions, should be equal one to another, or that these acts of the organs of sense and brain should be in due proportion and harmony. While therefore, I do not, with the craniologists, seek the predominance of any one of them, neither do I, with Giovanni de Laet, take no notice of the space between the top of the head and the commencement of the forehead, and say this part is not to be considered in the height of a man, *quia pars excrementosa est!*

Their next rule regarded the form of *the nose*, in nearly the same line with the forehead, and with little indentation between these parts.

The foundation of this rule I have not seen pointed out; and it was indeed difficult of discovery, without previous knowledge of the physiological fact first mentioned, in my physiognomical work, namely, that the nose is the inlet of vital emotion or pleasure, as the eye is of mental emotion; while the passions connected with nutrition and thought respectively, depend upon other organs, the mouth and the ear. Anatomists know how closely associated are the nose and the eyes, and the mouth and the ears respectively.

Now, as in these ideal representations, their object was to increase the means of emotion, but not those of passion, the organs of the former, the nose and the eyes, were all, at the same time, enlarged by raising the junction of the forehead and the nose; while those of passion, the mouth and the ears, were relatively decreased. Not only was the passage of the nose or of the olfactory nerves to the brain



strikingly dilated by this elevation of the intermediate part, but the orbits of the eyes were enlarged. As then we naturally associate the increase of organs with the increase of their sensations and with corresponding effects upon the brain, and as the tendency to such configuration is as conspicuous in the countries they inhabited, as is the energy of the emotions with which they are connected, this rule was as admirably founded as the former in natural tendencies.

I deem this a pendant to Camper's discovery of the facial angle, and one, too, which was not quite so obvious or so easy to be made. It disposes of this middle or intermediate part of the face, and shows that the Greeks, in beings of the highest character, desired the gradual predominance of emotion over passion, and of ideas or intellect over emotion.

A vague feeling of the curious fact I have here explained, Alison, as a man of taste, had, when he said, "Apply, however, this beautiful form to the countenance of the warrior, the bandit, the martyr, etc., or to any countenance which is meant to express deep or powerful *passion*, and the most vulgar spectator would be sensible of dissatisfaction, if not disgust."

In endeavouring to assign a reason for the configuration which I have just explained, Winckelmann, in ascribing it to the mere production of effect, is driven into a ridiculous inconsistency. He thinks that for large statues seen at a distance, it was necessary, and so came to be used for small medals seen near, for which it was not necessary!

"In the heads of statues, and particularly in ideal heads, the eyes are deeper set: the bulb remains



more deep than is usual in nature, in which sunken eyes render the countenance austere and cunning instead of calm and joyful. In this respect, art has departed with reason from nature; for in figures placed to be seen at a distance, if the bulb of the eye were level with the edge of the orbit, there would be no effect produced of light and shade; and the eye itself, placed under the eyebrows which do not project, would be dull and inexpressive. This maxim, adopted for large statues, became in time universal; so that it may be observed even on medals, not only in ideal heads but in portraits."<sup>1</sup> And elsewhere he says, "Art subsequently established it is as a rule to give this form to the eyes even in small figures, as may be seen in the heads on coins."<sup>2</sup>

Thus Winckelmann's reason avowedly explains only the half of that to which it is applied, and in reality explains nothing, because it leaves a gross inconsistency, of which Greek genius was incapable.

<sup>1</sup> "Gli occhj sono più internati nelle teste delle statue, e particolarmente nelle teste ideali, nelle quali il bulbo rimane più in dentro di quel che soglia essere nella natura, in cui gli occhj ritirati e depressi non rendono il sembiante sereno ed ilare, ma piuttosto austero e cupo. Quanto a ciò l' arte si è discostata non senza ragione dal naturale; imperocchè nelle figure collocate in sito rimoto dalla vista, se il bulbo dell' occhio fosse stato a livello dell' incassatura, non vi sarebbe prodotto effetto alcuno di luce e d' ombra; e l' occhio stesso situato sotto le ciglia, le quali non si sporgono, sarebbe poco significante e quasi stupido. Questa massima adottata per le statue grandi, col tempo divenne universale; talchè vedesi osservata anche nelle medaglie, rispetto non solo alle teste ideali, ma anche ai ritratti."—*Monumenti Inediti*.

<sup>2</sup> "L' arte stabilì in seguito una regola di dare all' occhio tal forma, eziandio nelle piccole figure; e diffatti così incassato vedesi anche sulle teste delle monete."—*Storia delle Arti*.



Of the general outline thus formed of the face, Winckelmann more truly says, "In the formation of the face, the Greek profile is the principal characteristic of sublime beauty. This profile is produced by the straight line, or the line but very slightly indented, which the forehead and nose form in youthful faces, especially female ones. Nature seems less disposed to accord this form to the face in cold than in mild and temperate climes; but wherever this profile is found, it is always beautiful. The straight full line expresses a kind of greatness, and, gently curved, it presents the idea of agreeable delicacy. That in these profiles exists one cause of beauty is proved by the character of the opposite line; for the greater the inflection of the nose, the less beautiful is the face; and if, when seen sideways, it presents a bad profile, it is useless to look for beauty in any other view."<sup>1</sup>

A *third rule* of the Greek artists, in heads of the highest character, is greatly illustrated by the new views just stated. If, in these, they desired to render ideas and intellect more dominant than emotions of pleasure or pain, and emotions more dominant than

<sup>1</sup> "Nella forma del volto il profilo greco è il principal carattere d'una bellezza sublime. Vien formato questo profilo da una linea retta, o almeno dolcemente piegata, che descrivon la fronte e'l naso sulle figure giovanili, e principalmente delle donne. La natura sembra compiacersi meno a dare tal forma ai volti ne' climi aspri, che sotto un cielo temperato e dolce; ma ovunque questa s'incontra, suole il volto sempre esser bello. La linea retta e compiuta esprime un non so che di grande, e la linea dolcemente incurvata ci presenta un'idea di piacevole delicatezza. Che in tali profili siavi una delle ragioni della bellezza lo dimostra l'opposto; imperocchè quanto maggiore è l'incavamento del naso, tanto più il volto dalla bella forma s'allontana; e ove questo lateralmente guardato presenta un cattivo profilo, non è sperabile di vederlo bello in niun aspetto."

—*Ibid.*



passion, it becomes evident why they equally sought to avoid the convulsions of impassioned expression.

A very beautiful object of this, is mistaken by Winckelmann. I quote his words.

“Taken in either sense [of action or of passion], expression,” says Winckelmann, “changes the features of the face, and the disposition of the body, and consequently the forms which constitute beauty; and the greater the change, the greater the loss of beauty. Therefore, the state of tranquillity and repose was considered as a fundamental point in the art. Tranquillity is the state proper to beauty.<sup>1</sup>

“The handsomest men are generally the most mild and the best disposed.<sup>2</sup>

“Besides, tranquillity and repose, both in men and animals, is the state which allows us best to examine and represent their nature and qualities; as we can see the bottom of the sea or rivers only when the waves are tranquil and the stream runs smoothly.<sup>3</sup>

“Therefore the Grecian artists, wishing to depict, in their representations of their deities, the perfection

<sup>1</sup> “L'espressione presa in amendue i sensi altera i tratti del volto, il contegno del corpo, e con essi le forme che costituiscono la beltà; e quanto maggiore è questa alterazione, tanto più di bellezza si perde. Perciò lo stato di tranquillità e di riposo, veniva nelle arti considerato come un punto fondamentale. La tranquillità è lo stato proprio della bellezza.”—*Storia delle Arti*.

<sup>2</sup> “Gli uomini più belli sono eziandio per l'ordinario più tranquilli e di miglior indole.”—*Ibid*.

<sup>3</sup> “In oltre la tranquillità e'l riposo sì degli uomini che degli animali è quello stato, in cui meglio possiamo conoscerne e rappresentarne l'indole e le proprietà, come il fondo del mare e de' fiumi allor solo scopriamo che tranquille sono o placide scorron l'onde.”—*Ibid*.



of human beauty, strove to produce, in their countenances and actions, a certain placidity without the slightest change or perturbation, which, according to their philosophy, was at variance with the nature and character of the gods. The figures produced in this state of repose expressed a perfect equilibrium of feeling.<sup>1</sup>

“But as complete tranquillity and repose cannot exist in figures in action, and even the gods are represented in human form, and subject to human affections, we must not always expect to find in them the most sublime idea of beauty. This is then compensated for by expression. The ancient artists, however, never lost sight of it: it was always their principal object, to which expression was in some sort made subservient.<sup>2</sup>

“Beauty without expression would be insignificant, and expression without beauty would be unpleasing; but from their influence over each other, from com-

<sup>1</sup> “Perciò gli artefici greci, volendo giugnere a ritrarre nelle immagini ch’ei chiamavano di questa e quella divinità, il compimento dell’umana bellezza, cercarono d’accordare col volto e con gli atti di esse una placidezza che con avesse il minimo che d’alterazione e di perturbazione, che secondo la filosofia, era anche impropria della natura e dello stato delle stesse Divinità. Le figure fatte con una tal compostezza esprimevano un equilibrio perfetto di sensazione.”—*Monumenti Inediti*.

<sup>2</sup> “Ma poichè nelle azioni la piena tranquillità e l’indifferenza non hanno luogo, e le stesse figure divine vengono rappresentate sotto umane forme e cogli umani affetti; quindi è che non sempre dee cercarsi in loro la più sublime idea della beltà. Questa allora vien compensata dall’espressione. Gli antichi artisti però non la perdevano mai di mira: anzi era sempre lo scopo loro principale a cui l’espressione doveva in qualche modo servire.”—*Storia delle Arti*.



binning together their apparently discordant qualities, results an eloquent, persuasive, and interesting beauty.”<sup>1</sup>

Some of these remarks are true and beautiful; but *the great object of the Greeks in suppressing the convulsions of impassioned expression, was the bestowal of grace*, the highest quality in all representation. It is surprising that this should have been so universally overlooked, that, even among artists, nothing is more common than to hear regrets that the Greeks gave so little expression to their figures! Let the reader now peruse again Dr. Smith’s and Mr. Alison’s account of grace, and if he is acquainted with the productions of ancient art, he will see that the Greeks suppressed impassioned expression only to bestow the highest degree of grace. Those, therefore, who complain of this, show themselves ignorant of the best object of their art.

If the explanation of this great purpose be clearly borne in mind, the remaining observations of Winkelmann will receive a better application than that to which he limited them.

“Repose and tranquillity may be regarded as the effect of that composed manner which the Grecians studied to show in their actions and gestures. Amongst them, a hurried gait was regarded as contrary to the idea of decent deportment, and partaking somewhat of expressive boldness. . . . Whilst on the other hand, slow and regulated

<sup>1</sup> “La beltà, senza l’ espressione, insignificante sarebbe, e l’ espressione senza la beltà sarebbe spiacevole; ma influendo l’ una sull’ altra, e combinandosi insieme le loro qualità che sembrano distruggersi a vicenda, ne risulta una parlante, persuasiva, ed attraente bellezza.”—*Ibid.*



motions of the body were proofs amongst the ancients of a great mind.<sup>1</sup>

“The highest idea of tranquillity and composure is found expressed in the representations of the divinities; so that from the father of the gods to the inferior deities, their figures appear free from the influence of any affection. The greatest of the poets thus describes Jupiter as making all Olympus tremble by merely moving his eyebrow or shaking his locks. . . . All the figures of Jupiter are not however made in the same style.<sup>2</sup>

“The Vatican Apollo represents this god quiet and tranquil after the death of the serpent Python, which he had slain with a dart, and should also express a certain contempt for a victory so easy to him. The skilful artist, who wished to embody the most beautiful of the gods, has depicted anger in the nose, which according to the most ancient poets was the seat of it, and contempt in the lips: contempt is expressed by the drawing up of the under lip, and anger by the expansion of the nostrils.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “Il riposo e la tranquillità denno considerarsi come un effetto di quella compostezza che i Greci studiavansi di mostrare nell'azione e ne' gesti. Presso di loro un passeggiar affrettato teneasi in certo modo come contrario all'idea d'un modesto contegno, e vi trovavano un non so che di arditezza soverchia. . . . Così per l'opposto i lenti gravi movimenti del corpo indizio erano presso gli antichi d'un' anima grande.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> “La più alta idea della tranquillità e della compostezza si trova espressa nelle figure delle divinità; cosicchè, cominciando dal padre de' numi sino agli dei subalterni, le figure loro non sembrano mosse da nessun affetto. Perciò il più grande fra i poeti ci descrive il suo Giove che, col solo mover le ciglia o scuotere il crine, tutto mette in moto l'Olimpo. . . . Non si creda però che in simil guisa formate siano tutte le figure di Giove.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> “L'Apollo del Vaticano dovea rappresentare questo dio cheto



“ The expression of the passions in the face should accord with the attitude and gestures of the body; and the latter should be suitable to the dignity of the gods in their statues and figures: from this results its propriety.

“ In representing the figures of heroes, the ancient artist exercised equal care and judgment; and expressed only those human affections which are suitable for a wise man, who represses the violence of his passions, and scarcely allows a spark of the internal flame to be seen, so as to leave to those who are desirous of it, the trouble of finding out what remains concealed.

“ We have examples of this in two of the most beautiful works of antiquity, one of which is the image of the fear of certain death, the other of suffering exceeding anguish.

“ Niobe and her daughters, against whom Diana shot her fatal arrows, are represented as seized with terror and horror, in that state of indescribable anguish, when the sight of instant and inevitable death deprives the mind of the power of thought. Of this state of stupor and insensibility, the fable gives us an idea in the metamorphosis of Niobe into a stone; and hence Æschylus introduces her in his tragedy as stunned and speechless. In such a moment, when all thought and feeling cease, in

e tranquillo sopra il morto drago Pitone da lui ucciso con un dardo, e dovea insieme esprimere certo disprezzo per una vittoria che era sì piccola cosa per lui. Il saggio artista, che voleva effigiare il più bello degli dei, gli collocò sdegno nel naso, che n' è la sede, secondo i più antichi poeti, e l' disprezzo sulle labbra: questo ha espresso col tirargli alquanto in su il labbro inferiore, e quello coll' avergli dilatate le narici.”—*Ibid.*



a state bordering upon insensibility, the appearance is not altered, nor any feature of the face disturbed, and the mighty artist could here depict the most sublime beauty, and has indeed done so. Niobe and her daughters are, and ever will be, the most perfect models of beauty.

“Laocoon is the image of the most acute grief, that puts the nerves, the muscles, and the veins in action. His blood is in a state of extreme agitation from the venomous bite of the serpents; every part of his body evinces pain and suffering; and the artist has put in motion, so to speak, all the springs of nature, and thus made known the extent of his art and the depth of his knowledge. In the representation, however, of this excessive torment, we can still recognize the conduct of a brave man struggling against his misfortunes, stifling the emotions of his anguish, and striving to repress them.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “L' espressione delle passioni sul volto dev' accordarsi colla positura e cogli atteggiamenti del corpo: e questi denno convenire alla dignità degli dei nelle loro statue e figure; quindi ne risulta la compostezza.

Egual cura e avvedutezza usarono gli antichi artisti nel rappresentare le figure degli eroi; e que' soli umani affetti espressero che convengono an un uomo savio, il quale reprime il bollire delle passioni, fa appena vedere qualche scintilla dell' interno suo fuoco, per lasciare a chi ne è bramoso la cura di scoprire quel che in loro rimane ascosto.

Abbiamo di ciò esempi in due de' più bei lavori dell' antichità de' quali uno è l' immagine del terrore, che ne dà la morte imminente, e l' altro del patimento de' dolori più atroci.

Niobe e le sue figlie, alle quali Diana vibra mortali saette, veggonsi rappresentate, comprese da terrore e da raccapriccio, in quello stato d' inesprimibile angoscia, in cui l' aspetto della morte presente inevitabile toglie per sin all' anima la facoltà di pensare. Di tale stato di stupore e d' insensibilità ci dà un' idea la favola nella



“The ancient artists have preserved this air of composure even in their dancing figures, except the Bacchanals; and thus an opinion obtained that the action of their figures should be modelled on the manners adopted in their ancient dances, and therefore, in their later dances, the ancient figures served as a model to the performers to prevent their overstepping the bounds of a modest deportment:<sup>1</sup>

Molli diducunt candida gestu  
Brachia. *Propert.*

“No immoderate or violent passions are ever found expressed in the public works of the ancients.<sup>2</sup>

metamorfosi di Niobe in sasso; e quindi Eschilo la introduce nella sua tragedia come interdetta e muta. In tal momento, in cui cessa ogni riflessione, ogni sentimento, e che si avvicina all' insensibilità, non si alterano punto le sembianze, e nessun tratto del volto si scompone; onde il grande artista potea quì effigiare la più sublime bellezza, e ve l' ha scolpita diffatti. Niobe e le sue figlie sono e sempre saranno i più perfetti modelli di beltà.

Laocoonte è l' immagine del più vivo dolore, che tutti mette in azione i muscoli, i nervi, e le vene. Il sangue suo è nella più forte agitazione pel velenoso morso de' serpenti: tutte le parti del suo corpo esprimono tormento e violenza; e l' artista ha messo in moto tutte, a così dire, le suste della natura, facendo in tal modo conoscere l' arte sua e le sue profonde cognizioni. Nella rappresentazione però di questo eccessivo tormento pur vi si riconosce il contegno d' un uomo grande, che contro i mali suoi combatte, affrena i moti della sensibilità, e vuole comprimerli.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>1</sup> “Tal compostezza hanno portata gli antichi artefici per sin nelle figure delle danzatrici, tranne però le Baccanti; e siccome era una massima ricevuta, che nelle figure l' azione conformarsi dovesse alle maniere usate ne' più antichi balli; così ne' balli seguenti le figure antiche servirono di modello alle saltatrici, affinchè non uscissero dai limiti d' un modesto contegno.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> “Nelle opere pubbliche degli antichi non veggonsi mai espresse passioni smoderate e violente.”—*Ibid.*



“The knowledge of the ancients cannot be better known than by comparing their performances with the majority of those of the moderns, in which a little is expressed by much, instead of much by a little. This is what the Greeks call *παρενθύρσος*; a word that aptly expresses the defect produced by too much expression in modern artists. Their figures resemble in action the comedians of the ancient theatre, who, to render themselves visible even to the most distant portion of the audience, were compelled to exceed the limits of nature and truth; and the faces of modern figures are like the ancient masks, which for the same reason, the increase of expression, became hideous.

“This excess of expression is taught in a book which goes into the hands of all young artists, a Treatise on the Passions, by Carlo le Brun, and in the annexed drawings, not only is the highest degree of passion expressed on the face, but in some even to madness.”<sup>1</sup>

Hence we may say with Azara, that “The Greeks

<sup>1</sup> “Il saper degli antichi non si puo meglio conoscere che nel confrontar i loro colla maggior parte de' moderni lavori, ne' quali non molto con poco, ma bensì poco con molto vedesi espresso. Questo dai Greci detto sarebbesi *παρενθύρσος*; voce atta ad esprimere il difetto che v'è per lo più nell' espressione de' recenti artefici. Le figure loro sono per l' atteggiamento simili ai comici dell' antico teatro, i quali per esser ben visibili, eziandio al più minuto popolo che stava all' estremità, doveano oltrepassare i limiti della naturalezza a del vero; e i volti delle figure moderne sono simili alle antiche maschere, che per la medesima ragione, affin d' essere molto espressive, erano sformate.

“Questa espressione eccessiva vien insegnata in un libro che va per le mani di tutt' i giovani artisti, cioè nel Trattato delle passioni di Carlo Le-Brun; e negli aggiuntivi disegni non solo vedesi espresso sul volto il più alto grado delle passioni, ma in alcuni vanno queste sino al furore.”—*Ibid.*



possessed that art in such perfection, that in their statues, one scarcely discovers that they had thought of expression, and nevertheless each says that which it ought to say. They are in a repose which shows all the beauty without any alteration ; and a soft and sweet motion, of the mouth, the eyes, or the mere action, expresses the effect, enchanting at once the mind and the senses.”<sup>1</sup>

In the inferior beings, however, when passion is expressed, the features are varied by the Greek artists as they are in nature.

Such are the great ideal rules with regard to the head and the functions of thought.

With regard to the body and the NUTRITIVE SYSTEM, the Greeks similarly idealized. “ Seeking for images of worship, consequently of a nature superior to our own, so that they might awaken in the mind veneration and love, they thought that the representations most worthy of the Divinity, and most likely to attract the attention of man, would be those expressing the continuance of the gods in eternal youth and in the prime of life.”<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> “I Greci possederono quest’ arte a tal segno, che nelle loro statue appena si scorge, ch’ eglino abbiano pensato all’ espressione, e nondimeno cadauna dice quel, che deve dire. Stanno in un riposo, che mostrano tutta la bellezza senza alcuna alterazione ; ed un soave, e dolce movimento della bocca, degli occhi, o la sola azione esprime l’ effetto, incantando e l’ anima, e i sensi.”

<sup>2</sup> “Costoro volendo proporci delle immagini da venerarsi, e perciò di natura superiore alla nostra, sicchè n’ eccitassero nella mente la venerazione e l’ amore, s’ idearono che i simulacri più degni della divinità e più atti ad attrarsi la fantasia dell’ uomo, fossero quelli che n’ esprimessero la permanenza degli Dei in una eterna gioventù e primavera di vita, allusiva all’ immutabilità dell’ Esser supremo.”—*Monumenti Inediti.*



“To the idea derived from the poets, of the eternal youth of the deities, whether male or female, was added another by which they supposed the female divinities should have all the appearance of virgins.<sup>1</sup>

“The form of the breast in the figures of the divinities, is like that of a virgin, which, to be beautiful, must possess a moderate fulness.<sup>2</sup> This was particularly shown in the breasts, which the artists represented without nipples, like those of young girls, whose cincture, in the poet’s phrase, Lucina has not yet undone.”<sup>3</sup>

On their treatment of the limbs and LOCOMOTIVE SYSTEM, Hogarth throws light; and, as I am not aware that he was anticipated in this respect, I quote him.

“May be,” he says, “I cannot throw a stronger light on what has been hitherto said of proportion, than by animadverting on a remarkable beauty in the Apollo Belvidere, which hath given it the preference even to the Antinous: I mean a super-addition of greatness, to at least as much beauty and grace as is found in the latter.

“These two masterpieces of art are seen together in the same apartment at Rome, where the Antinous fills the spectator with admiration only, whilst the

<sup>1</sup> “All’ idea datane da’ poeti delle Divinità sempre giovani, o maschili o femminili ch’ elle si fossero, fu aggiunta l’ altra per cui un si supponesse che le femminili avessero tutte l’ apparenza di vergini.”—*Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> “La forma del petto nelle figure divine è simile al verginale, che per esser bello aver deve una moderata pienezza.”—*Storia delle Arti.*

<sup>3</sup> “La quale si ravvisasse specialmente nelle mammelle, rappresenteci perciò dagli artefici senza capezzuoli, e simili a quelle delle fanciulle, alle quali, secondo la frase de’ poeti, Lucina non ha sciolto ancor la cintura.”—*Monumenti Inediti.*



Apollo strikes him with surprise, and, as travellers express themselves, with an appearance of something more than human; which they of course are always at a loss to describe: and, this effect, they say, is the more astonishing, as upon examination, its disproportion is evident even to a common eye. One of the best sculptors we have in England, who lately went to see them, confirmed to me what has been now said, particularly as to the legs and thighs being too long and too large for the upper parts.

“Although in very great works we often see an inferior part neglected, yet here it cannot be the case, because in a fine statue just proportion is one of its essential beauties: therefore it stands to reason that these limbs must have been lengthened on purpose, otherwise it might have been easily avoided.

“So that if we examine the beauties of this figure thoroughly, we may reasonably conclude, that what has been hitherto thought so unaccountably excellent in its general appearance, hath been owing to what hath seemed a blemish in a part of it: but let us endeavour to make this matter as clear as possible, as it may add more force to what has been said.

“Statues, by being bigger than life (as this one is, and larger than the Antinous), always gain some nobleness in effect, according to the principle of quantity, but this alone is not sufficient to give what is properly to be called greatness in proportion.

. . . Greatness of proportion must be considered as depending on the application of quantity to those parts of the body where it can give more scope to its grace in movement, as to the neck for the larger and swan-like turns of the head, and to the legs and



thighs, for the more ample sway of all the upper parts together.

“By which we find that the Antinous’s being equally magnified to the Apollo’s height, would not sufficiently produce that superiority of effect, as to greatness, so evidently seen in the latter. The additions necessary to the production of this greatness in proportion, as it there appears added to grace, must then be by the proper application of them to the parts mentioned only.

“I know not how further to prove this matter than by appealing to the reader’s eye and common observation, as before. . . . The Antinous being allowed to have the justest proportion possible, let us see what addition, upon the principle of quantity, can be made to it, without taking away any of its beauty.

“If we imagine an addition of dimensions to the head, we shall immediately conceive it would only deform,—if to the hands or feet, we are sensible of something gross and ungenteel,—if to the whole lengths of the arms, we feel they would be dangling and awkward,—if by an addition of length or breadth to the body, we know it would appear heavy and clumsy,—there remains then only the neck, with the legs and thighs to speak of; but to these we find, that not only certain additions may be admitted without causing any disagreeable effect, but that thereby greatness, the last perfection as to the proportion, is given to the human form, as is evidently expressed in the Apollo.”

This is well done by Hogarth. It required but a little anatomical knowledge to see the reason of this. The length of the neck, by which the head



is further detached from the trunk, shows the independence of the higher intellectual system upon the lower one of mere nutrition; and the length of limbs shows that the mind had already obedience in locomotive power.

I have now to obviate some OBJECTIONS to the existence of simple, pure, high and perfect ideal beauty, objections which writers on this subject have hitherto neglected.

Alison says, "The proportions of the form of the infant are very different from those of youth; these again from those of manhood; and these again perhaps still more from those of old age and decay. . . . Yet every one knows, not only that each of these periods is susceptible of beautiful form, but, what is much more, that the actual beauty in every period consists in the preservation of the proportions peculiar to that period, and that these differ in every article almost from those that are beautiful in other periods of the life of the same individual."

But the beauty of the infant is not perfect beauty: it is that, on the contrary, of mere promise, not that of fulfilment. So also the beauty of old age is not perfect beauty: it is that, on the contrary, which affects and interests us chiefly by the regret we feel that its perfection has passed, or is gradually vanishing.

"The same observation," says Alison, "is yet still more obvious with regard to the difference of sex. In every part of the form, the proportions which are beautiful in the two sexes are different; and the application of the proportions of the one to the form of the other, is everywhere felt as painful and disgusting." So also says Burke. "Let us rest a



moment on this point; and consider how much difference there is between the measures that prevail in many similar parts of the body, in the two sexes of this single species only. If you assign any determinate proportions to the limbs of man, and if you limit human beauty to these proportions, when you find a woman who differs in the make and measure of almost every part, you must conclude her not to be beautiful in spite of the suggestions of your imagination; or in obedience to your imagination you must renounce your rules; you must lay by the scale and compass, and look out for some other cause of beauty. For if beauty be attached to certain measures which operate from a principle in nature, why should similar parts with different measures of proportion be found to have beauty, and this too in the very same species? ”

To this I might say the beauty of woman is not the highest beauty: it is beauty of the nutritive more than of the higher thinking system. But there is another and a better answer: the difference of sex which affects all the higher animals is a greater difference than that which subsists between some of their varieties or even of their species; and the same laws of ideal beauty are as inapplicable to different sexes as to different species.

“We see, every day, around us,” says Alison, “some forms of our species which affect us with sentiments of beauty. In our own sex, we see the forms of the legislator, the man of rank, the general, the man of science, the private soldier, the sailor, the labourer, the beggar, etc. In the other sex, we see the forms of the matron, the widow, the young woman, the nurse, the domestic servant, etc. . . .



We expect different proportions of form from the painter, in his representation of a warrior and a shepherd, of a senator and of a peasant, of a wrestler and a boatman, of a savage and of a man of cultivated manners. . . . We expect, in the same manner, from the statuary, very different proportions in the forms of Jove and of Apollo [this should have been excepted], of Hercules and of Antinous, of a Grace and of Andromache, of a Bacchanal and of Minerva," etc.

That, in all these cases, the beauty is partial, is evident from the circumstance that what is found in one is wanting in another; and partial beauty is not perfect beauty. But this last point has been well stated by Reynolds and Barry.

"To the principle I have laid down," says Reynolds, "that the idea of beauty in each species of being is an invariable one, it may be objected, that in every particular species there are various central forms, which are separate and distinct from each other, and yet are undeniably beautiful; that in the human figure, for instance, the beauty of Hercules is one, of the Gladiator another, of the Apollo another [again the same error]; which makes so many different ideas of beauty. . . . It is true indeed, that these figures are each perfect in their kind, though of different character and proportions; but still none of them is the representation of an individual, but of a class. And as there is one general form, which, as I have said, belongs to the human kind at large, so in each of these classes there is one common idea and central form, which is the abstract of the various individual forms belonging to that class. Thus, though the forms of



childhood and age differ exceedingly, there is a common form in childhood, and a common form in age, which is the more perfect, as it is more remote from all peculiarities. But I must add further, that though the most perfect forms of each of the general divisions of the human figure are ideal, and superior to any individual form of that class, yet the highest perfection of the human figure is not to be found in any one of them. It is not in the Hercules, nor in the Gladiator, nor in the Apollo, but in that form which is taken from all, and which partakes equally of the activity of the Gladiator, of the delicacy of the Apollo, and of the muscular strength of the Hercules. For perfect beauty in any species must combine all the characters which are beautiful in that species. It cannot consist in any one to the exclusion of the rest; no one therefore must be predominant, that no one may be deficient."

"A high degree of particular character," says Barry, "cannot be superinduced upon pure or simple beauty without altering its constituent parts; this is peculiar to grace only; for particular characters consist, as has been observed before, in those deviations from the general standard for the better purpose of effecting utility and power, and become so many species of a higher order; where nature is elevated into grandeur, majesty, and sublimity."

There is AN IDEAL IN ATTITUDE as well as in the form of the head and body.

This ideal is exactly opposed to the academical rule mentioned by Dufresnoy, Reynolds, and others, namely, that the right leg and left arm, or the left leg and right arm, should be advanced or withdrawn together. These are the mere attitudes of progres-



sion, not those of expression; and the academical rule is only an academical blunder. To anything but walking—to the free and unembarrassed expressions of the body, it is indeed quite inapplicable, and could produce only contortion.

The rule of ideal attitude, which I long ago deduced both from physiological principles, and from the practice of the Greek artists, is that all the parts of one side of the body should be advanced or withdrawn together; that when one side is advanced, the other should be withdrawn; and that when the right arm is elevated, extended or bent forward, the left leg should be elevated, extended or bent backward—in all respects the reverse of the academical rule, so complacently mentioned by Dufresnoy, Reynolds, etc.

The foundation of this rule in the necessary balance of the body, and that distribution of motion which equally animates every part, must be obvious to every one. It is illustrated by the finest statues of the Greeks, wherever the expression intended was free and unembarrassed, and even in those, as the Laocoon and his sons, where, though the action was constrained and convulsive, the sculptor was yet at liberty to employ the most beautiful attitude. It is abandoned in these great works, when either action embarrassed by purpose, or clownishness, as in the Dancing Faun, are expressed.<sup>1</sup>

I have now only to add, with Moreau, that individual beauty, the most perfect, differs always

<sup>1</sup> This rule is well explained, and variously illustrated by Donald Walker, in his work, equally philosophical, instructive and amusing, entitled "Exercises for Ladies," a knowledge of which, and the practice of its principles, would render beauty, and especially beauty of the shoulders and arms, far more common in every family.



greatly from the ideal, and that which is least removed from it, is very difficult to be found. Hence in all languages, the epithet *rare* is attached to beauty: and the Italians even call it *pellegrina*, foreign, to indicate that they have not frequently an opportunity of seeing it: they speak of “*bellezze pellegrine*,” “*leggiadria singolare e pellegrina*.”



## CHAPTER XIX.

### THE IDEAL OF FEMALE BEAUTY.

---

“Hominum divômque voluptas, alma Venus.”

---

OF this, the most perfect models have been created by Grecian art. Few, we are told, were the living beauties, from whom such ideal model could be framed. The difficulty of finding these among the women of Greece must have been considerable, when Praxiteles and Apelles were obliged to have recourse, in a greater or less degree, to the same person, for the beauties of the Venus of Cnidos, executed in white marble, and the Venus of Cos, painted in colours. It is asserted by Athenæus, that both these productions were, in some measure, taken from Phryne of Thespia, in Bœotia, then a courtesan at Athens.

Both productions are said to have represented Phryne coming out of the sea, on the beach of Sciron, in the Saronic Gulf, between Athens and Eleusis, where she was wont to bathe.

It is said, that there, at the feast of Neptune, Phryne, in the presence of the people of Eleusis,



having cast aside her dress, and allowing her long hair to fall over her shoulders, plunged into the sea, and sported long amidst its waves. An immense number of spectators covered the shore; and when she came out of it, all exclaimed, "It is Venus who rises from the waters!" The people would actually have taken her for the goddess, if she had not been well known to them.

Apelles and Praxiteles, we are told, were both upon the shore; and both resolved to represent the birth of Venus according to the beautiful model which they had just beheld.

Such is said to have been the origin of two of the greatest works of antiquity. The work of Apelles, known under the name of Venus Anadyomene, was placed by Cæsar in the temple of Venus Genitrix, after the conquest of Greece. An idea of the sculpture of Praxiteles is supposed to have been imperfectly preserved to modern times in the Venus de Medici.

We are further told, that, after having studied several attitudes, Phryne fancied to have discovered one more favourable than the rest for displaying all her perfections; and that both painter and sculptor were obliged to adopt her favourite posture. From this cause, the Venus of Cnidos, and the Venus of Cos, were so perfectly alike, that it was impossible to remark any difference in their features, contour, or more particularly in their attitude.

The painting of Apelles, it is added, was far from exciting so much enthusiasm among the Greeks, as the sculpture of Praxiteles. They fancied that the marble moved; that it seemed to speak; and their illusion, says Lucian, was so great, that



they ended by applying their lips to those of the goddess.<sup>1</sup>

“Praxiteles,” says Flaxman, “excelled in the highest graces of youth and beauty. He is said to have excelled not only other sculptors, but himself, by his marble statues in the Ceramicus of Athens; but his Venus was preferable to all others in the world, and many sailed to Cnidos for the purpose of seeing it. This sculptor having made two statues of Venus, one with drapery, the other without, the Coans preferred the clothed figure, on account of its severe modesty, the same price being set upon each. The citizens of Cnidos took the rejected statue, and afterwards refused it to king Nicomedes, who would have forgiven them an immense debt in return; but they were resolved to suffer anything so long as this statue by Praxiteles ennobled Cnidos. . . . This figure is known by the descriptions of Lucian and Cedrenus, and it is represented on a medal of Caracalla and Plautilla, in the imperial cabinet of France. This Venus was still in Cnidos during the reign of the emperor Arcadius, about 400 years after Christ. This statue seems to offer the first idea of the Venus de Medicis, which is likely to be the repetition of another Venus, the work of this artist.” He elsewhere says of the Venus of Praxiteles, it was “The

<sup>1</sup> It was at the extremity of the modern Cape Crio, anciently Triopium, a promontory of Doris, a province of Caria, that was built the celebrated city of Cnidos. Here Venus was worshipped: here was seen this statue of that goddess, the most beautiful of the works of Praxiteles. A temple, far from spacious, and open on all sides, contained it, without concealing it from view; and in whatever point of view it was examined, it excited equal admiration. No drapery veiled its charms; and so uncommon was its beauty, that it inflamed with a violent passion another Pygmalion.



most admired female statue of all antiquity, whose beauty is as perfect as it is elevated, and as innocent as perfect; from which the Medicean Venus seems but a deteriorated variety."

Flaxman states that he himself had seen, in the stables of the Braschi palace, a statue which he supposed might be the original work of Praxiteles. Strange to tell, nothing is now known of its fate! A supposed cast from this, or from a copy of it, conforming to the figure on the model of Caracalla, is to be seen at the Royal Academy.

Of the VENUS DE MEDICI, Flaxman says, it "was so much a favourite of the Greeks and Romans, that a hundred ancient repetitions of this statue have been noticed by travellers. The individual figure is said to have been found in the forum of Octavia. The style of sculpture seems to have been later than Alexander the Great.

Let us now briefly examine this Model of Female Beauty represented in our Frontispiece.

The Venus de Medici represents woman at that age when every beauty has just been perfected. "The Venus de Medici at Florence," says Winckelmann, "is like a rose which, after a beautiful day-break, expands its leaves to the first ray of the sun, and represents that age when the limbs assume a more finished form and the breast begins to develop itself."<sup>1</sup>

The size of the head is sufficiently small to leave that predominance to the vital organs in the chest,

<sup>1</sup> "La Venere de' Medici a Firenze è simile alla rosa, che esce fuor dalla buccia al primo apparir del sole dopo una bella aurora; e par che senta quell' età, in cui le membra prendon una più compiuta forma, e comincia il seno a sollevarsi."—*Storia delle Arti*.



which, as already said, makes the nutritive system peculiarly that of woman. This is the first and most striking proof of the profound knowledge of the artist, the principles of whose art taught him that the vast head, on the contrary, was the characteristic of a very different female personage.<sup>1</sup>—In mentioning the head, it is scarcely possible to avoid noticing the rich curls of the hair.

The eyes next fix our attention by their soft, sweet, and glad expression. This is produced with exquisite art. To give softness, the ridges of the eyebrows are rounded. To give sweetness, the under eyelid, which I would call the expressive one, is slightly raised. "The eyes of Venus," says Wincklemann, "are smaller, and the slight elevation of the lower eyelid produces that languishing look called by the Greeks *ὕγρον*."<sup>2</sup> To give the expression of gladness or of pleasure, the opening of the eyelids is diminished, in order to diminish, or partially to exclude, the excess of those impressions, which make even pleasure painful. Other exquisite details about those eyes, confer on them unparalleled beauty. Still, as observed by

<sup>1</sup> The phrenologists have told us that the head of this Venus is too small. They might as well have said, that the head of the Minerva, or of the Jupiter, is too large, or a hundred other ignorant inapplicabilities, and ridiculous pedantries. But to set aside ideal forms, I may observe, that sex makes a vast difference in the head, and a woman with a small head often produces a son with a large one.

<sup>2</sup> "Nelle Veneri gli occhi sono più piccoli, e la palpebra inferiore alquanto alzata forma in esse quel desio anelante detto da Grecie *ὕγρον*." He adds, "Gli occhj così formati distinguono la Venere celeste da Giunone; e questa Venere della quale è proprio il diadema di quella regina delle dee, viene perciò presa per Giunone da coloro i quali non hanno considerato più addentro la bellezza delle statue antiche."—*Monumenti Inediti*.



the same writer, this look is far from those traits indicative of lasciviousness, with which some modern artists have thought to characterize their Venuses. Love was considered by the ancient masters, as by the wise philosophers of those times, to use the expression of Euripides, as the counsellor of wisdom: *τῇ σοφίᾳ παρέδρους ἔρωτας*. One thing must be observed: there is not here, as in some less happy representations of Venus, any downcast look, but that aspect of which Metastasio, in his *Inno a Venere*, says:

Tu colle lucide  
Pupille chiare,  
Fai lieta e fertile  
La terra e'l mare.

And again :

Presso à tuoi placidi  
Astri ridenti,  
Le nubi fuggono,  
Fuggono i venti.<sup>1</sup>

Art still profounder was perhaps shown in the configuration of the nose. The peculiar connexion of this sense with love was evidently well understood by the great artist; and it is only gross ignorance that has made some persons question the appropriateness of that development of the organ which is here represented. Not only is smell peculiarly associated with love, in all the higher animals, but it is associated with reproduction in plants, the majority of which evolve delicious odours only when their flowers or

<sup>1</sup> This is beautiful, but is evidently borrowed from the great philosophical poet's

Te, Dea, te fugiunt ventei, te nubila coeli,  
Adventumque tuum.



organs of fructification are displayed.<sup>1</sup>—Connected, indeed, with the capacity of the nose, and the cavities which open into it, is the projection of the whole middle part of the face.

In the mouth, also, is transcendent art displayed. It is rendered sweet and delicate by the lips being undeveloped at their angles,<sup>2</sup> and by the upper lip continuing so, for a considerable portion of its length. It expresses love of pleasure by the central development of both lips, and active love by the especial development of the lower lip.<sup>3</sup> By the slight opening of the lips, it expresses desire.<sup>4</sup>

These exquisite details, and the omission of nothing intellectually expressive that nature presents, have led some to imagine the Venus de Medici to be a portrait. In doing so, however, they see not the profound calculation required for nearly every feature thus embodied. More strangely still, they forget the ideal character of the whole: the notion of this ideal head being too small is especially opposed to such an opinion. If more is wanting, it will surely be enough that the other works which we are supposed to possess of Praxiteles, the Faun and the Cupid, present similar fine details.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> That, in plants, these odours are even necessary to their reproduction, is proved by their uniform existence at that period. And if being affected by odours implies a sense of smell, or some modification of it, then must plants possess it.

<sup>2</sup> In all grossly sensual nations and individuals, the lips are everted even at the angles.

<sup>3</sup> See this explained in "Physiognomy."

<sup>4</sup> "Venere suol tenere alquanto aperte le labbra, come per indicare un languido desiderio ed amore."—*Storia delle Arti*.

<sup>5</sup> In the Cupid, the form of the head is godlike. The hair not



Withal, the look is amorous and languishing, without being lascivious, and is as powerfully marked by gay coquetry, as by charming innocence.

The young neck is exquisitely formed. Its beautiful curves show a thousand capabilities of motion; and its admirably calculated swell over the organ of voice, results from, and marks, the struggling expression of still mysterious love.

In short, I know no antique figure that displays such profound knowledge, both physiological and physiognomical, even in the most minute details; and all who are capable of appreciating these things, may well smile at those who pretend to compare with this any other head of Venus, now known to us.

With regard to the rest of the figure, the admirable form of the mammæ, which, without being too large, occupy the bosom, rise from it with various curves on every side, and all terminate in their apices, leaving the inferior part in each precisely as pendent as gravity demands; the flexile waist gently only curls with all the vigour of early years, but, with perfect knowledge of nature's tendency, is bent into a ridge along the middle of the upper head. The brow, full, open, and charmingly rounded, is the evident throne of young observation, and it flows with such beauty into the parts behind, as if it actually *said* its purpose was to fling its observations back on thought and will. Its beginnings at the eye-brows display exquisite knowledge: the bony ridge is admirably shown to be yet unformed; and while its outer extremity forms but the orbital convexity, or shell for the globe of the eye, the inner extremity of the eye-brow is with infinite art drawn over soft and hollow space, as if the few hairs that composed it made there its only convexity. In short, in every part of the face, fine and faint as is every youthful feature, no detail is lost; and this, added to the pointed chin and upper lip, declare the purpose of the little god.



tapering little further than the middle of the trunk; the lower portion of it beginning gradually to swell out higher even than the umbilicus; the gradual expansion of the haunches, those expressive characteristics of the female, indicating at once her fitness for the office of generation and that of parturition—expansions which increase till they reach their greatest extent at the superior part of the thighs; the fulness behind their upper part, and on each side of the lower part of the spine, commencing as high as the waist, and terminating in the still greater swell of the distinctly separated hips; the flat expanse between these, and immediately over the fissure of the hips, relieved by a considerable dimple on each side, and caused by the elevation of all the surrounding parts; the fine swell of the broad abdomen which, soon reaching its greatest height, immediately under the umbilicus, slopes gently to the mons veneris, but, narrow at its upper part, expands more widely as it descends, while, throughout, it is laterally distinguished by a gentle depression from the more muscular parts on the sides of the pelvis; the beautiful elevation of the mons veneris; the contiguous elevation of the thighs which, almost at their commencement, rise as high as it does; the admirable expansion of these bodies inward, or toward each other, by which they almost seem to intrude upon each other, and to exclude each from its respective place; the general narrowness of the upper, and the unembraceable expansion of the lower part thus exquisitely formed;—all these admirable characteristics of female form, the mere existence of which in woman must, one is tempted to imagine, be, even to herself, a source of ineffable pleasure—







From the middle of the navel to the base of the belly and beginning of the thighs, eleven parts, four minutes and a half.

From the bottom of the belly to the middle of the knee-pan, eighteen parts, two minutes.

From the middle of the knee-pan to the beginning of the flank, twenty-seven parts, three minutes.

From the middle of the knee-pan to the ground, twenty-five parts, three minutes.

The greatest height of the foot, three parts, five minutes and a half.

From the neck of the leg to the end of the toes, nine parts and half a minute.

From the commencement of the humerus to the elbow, twenty parts, two minutes.

From the elbow to the beginning of the hand, fourteen parts.

The greatest breadth of the fore-arm, five parts.

The greatest breadth of the arm, four parts, five minutes.

From the depression between the clavicles to the beginning of the deltoid, six parts, four minutes.

From the depression between the clavicles to the point of the nipple, ten parts and half a minute.

Between the points of the nipples, eleven parts, two minutes.

The breadth of the torso, at the level of the lowest part of the breast, fifteen parts, four minutes and a half.

The least breadth of the torso, at the commencement of the flanks, fourteen parts, one minute.

The greatest breadth of the torso, at the bottom of the flanks, seventeen parts, five minutes.

The breadth from the trochanter of one thigh to that of the other, nineteen parts, three minutes.

The greatest breadth of the thigh, nine parts, five minutes.

The greatest breadth of the knee, six parts.

The greatest breadth of the calf of the leg, six parts, three minutes and a half.

The breadth from one ancle to another, four parts.

The least breadth of the foot, three parts, three minutes and a half.

The greatest breadth of the foot, five parts and one minute.

---



The arms of the Venus de Medici, it should be observed, are of modern construction, and unworthy of the figure.

The VENUS OF NAPLES is of altogether a different species of beauty.

That figure represents an ample and rather voluptuous matron, in an attitude of scarcely surpassable grace. The character of the face is beautiful, in profile especially, and its expression is grave. The mouth has much of nature about it, resembling greatly in character that feature as seen in Southern Europe; but its expression, though tender, is somewhat serious or fretful.

It presents, however, many faults. The head is monstrous. The neck is equally so, as well as coarse. The forehead, eyes, nose and cheeks present none of the finely calculated details, which surprise and delight us in the Venus de Medici. The mammæ are not true.<sup>1</sup>

After these, the androgynous being, called the VENUS OF ARLES, is scarcely worthy of being mentioned. She derives some grandeur from antique character and symmetry, and some from her masculine features. The head is monstrous; the neck horrid; the nose heavy; the mouth contemptuous.

Upon the whole, neither the graceful matron of

<sup>1</sup> I know not if it is of this statue that Winckelmann speaks in the following passage: "Venere celeste, quella cioè che di Giove e dell' Armonia è figlia, diversa dall' altra che da Dione nacque, distinguesi per un diadema simile a quello, ch' è proprio a Giunone. Porta pure questo diadema Venere Vittrice, di cui una statua, che posa un piede su un elmo, fu disotterrata nel teatro dell' antica città di Capua, e sta ora nel real palazzo di Caserta; essa è bellissima, se non che le mancano le braccia."—*Storia delle Arti*.



Naples, nor the manlike woman of the Louvre, can be brought into competition with the Venus de Medici.

---

In contrast with beauty unaltered by the natural events of life, Plate XVIII. exhibits the effects of gestation, parturition, and lactation.



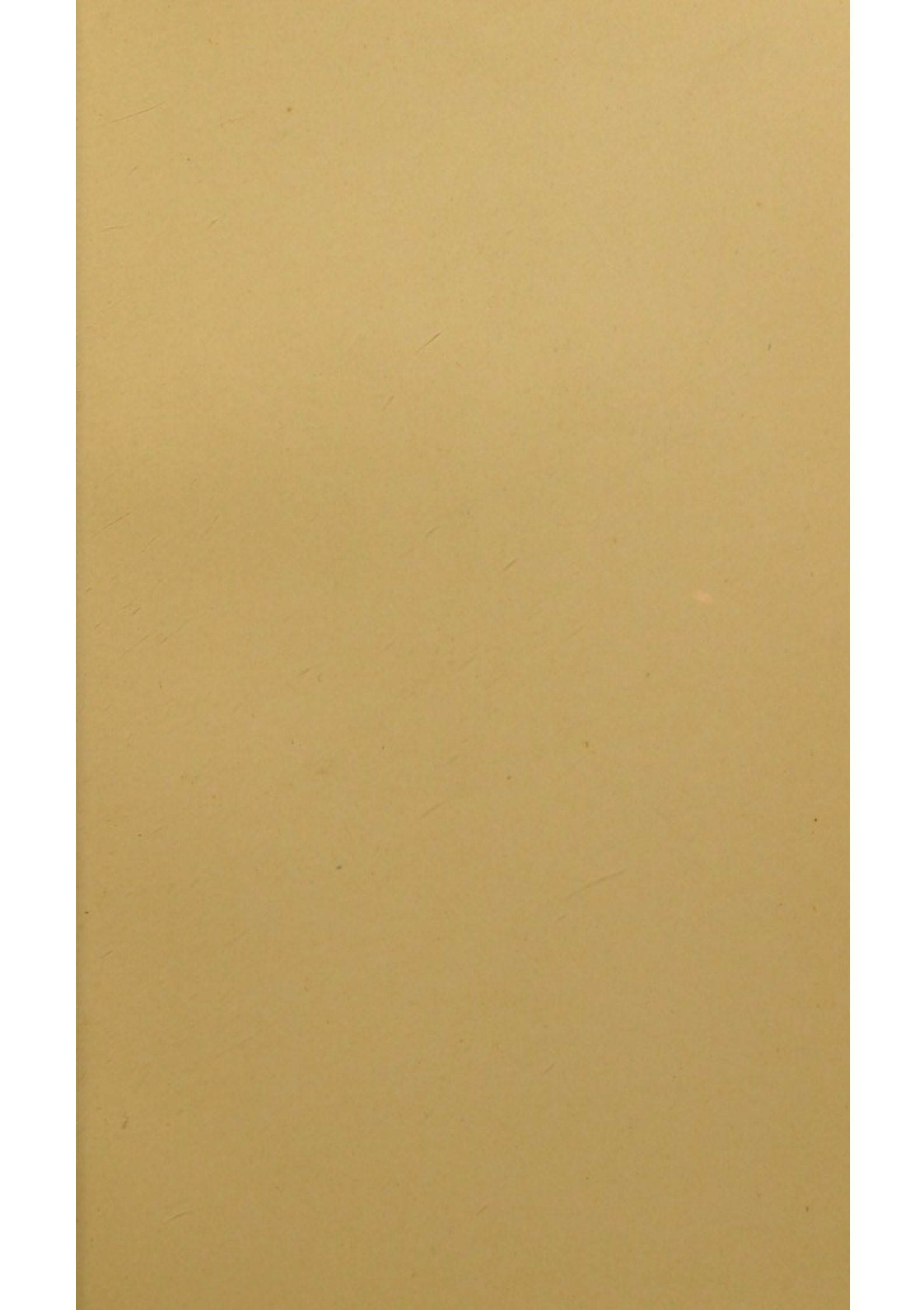


PLATE XVIII.











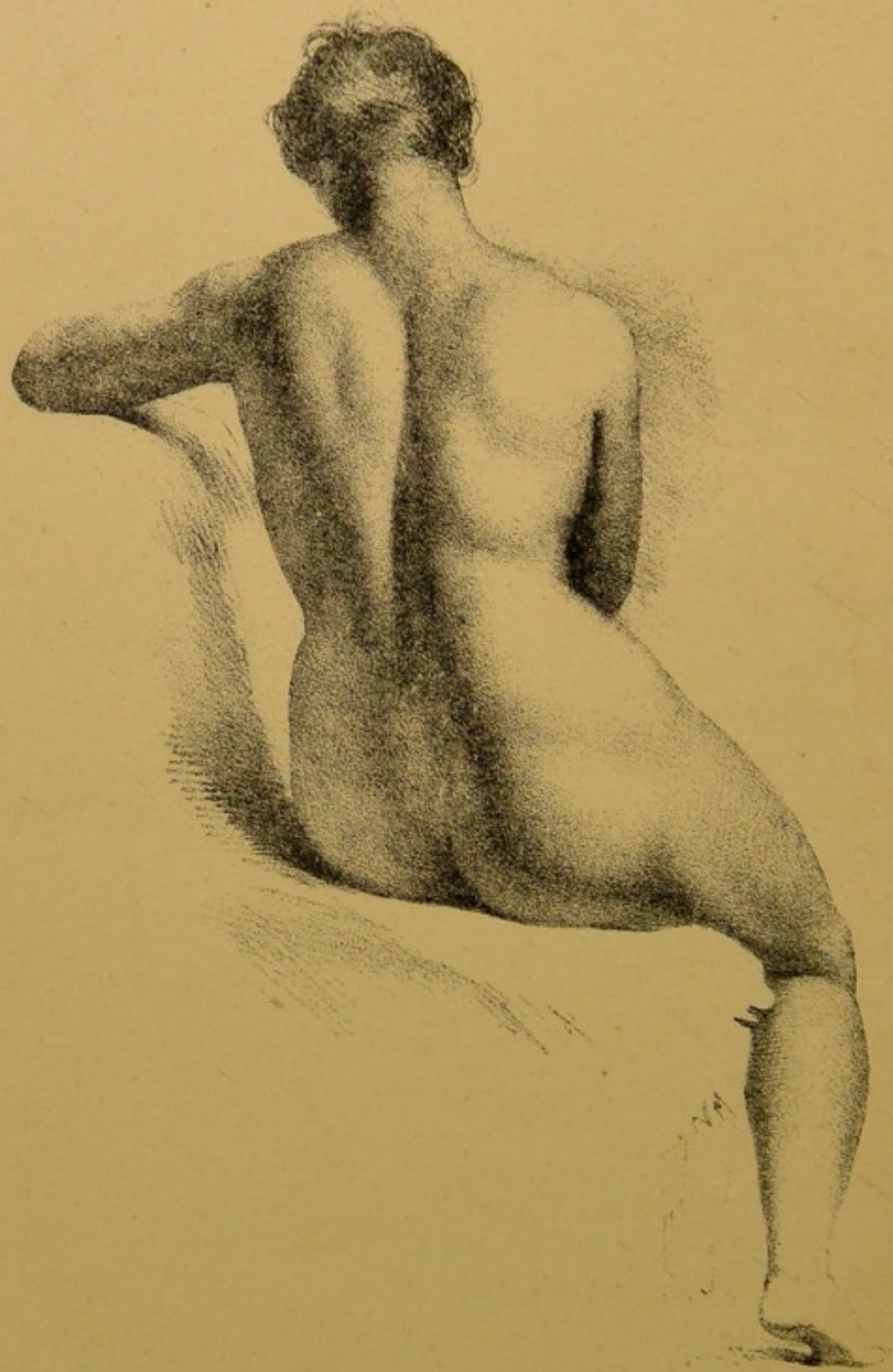


PLATE XIX.



## CHAPTER XX.

### DEFECTS OF BEAUTY.

---

#### DEFECTS OF THE LOCOMOTIVE SYSTEM.

1. If the whole figure be either too broad or too tall; because, the first is inelegant, and the last unfeminine. See Plate XIX.—Persons who are too tall are generally ill at ease and destitute of grace, a greater misfortune to a woman than to a man.—Too low a stature is a defect less disagreeable, especially for women. If, however, on the one side it gives prettiness, on the other it deprives of all imposing appearance.

2. If the bones, except those of the pelvis, be not proportionally small; because, in woman, this portion of the locomotive system ought to be completely subordinate to the vital.

3. If the ligaments, and the articulations they form, be not proportionally small; because, in woman, this portion of the locomotive system ought also to be completely subordinate to the vital.

Either of the last two defects will produce what is termed clumsiness.

4. If the muscles, generally more slender, feeble, soft and yielding than in man, be not large around



the pelvis, and delicate elsewhere; because, this is necessary, for reasons which will be afterwards assigned, as well as to permit the ease and suppleness of the movements.

5. If, in a mature female, the length of the neck, compared with the trunk, be not proportionally somewhat less than in the male; because, in her, the subordination of the locomotive system, the predominance of the vital, and the dependence of the mental, are naturally connected with the shorter vertebræ and shorter course of the vessels of the neck.

---

(The following defects, from 6 to 15 inclusive, have necessarily a reference also to the vital system; because, the form and capacity of the cavities here spoken of, as formed by the osseous frame of the locomotive system, have an obvious relation to the vital organs, which these cavities are destined to contain.)

6. If the upper part of the body (exclusive of the bosom) be proportionally more, and the lower part of the body less, prominent, than in man, so that, when she stands perfectly upright or lies on the back, the space between the breasts is more prominent than the mons veneris; because, such conformation is injurious to impregnation, gestation, and parturition.

7. If the shoulders seem wider than the haunches; because, this appearance generally arises from the narrowness of the pelvis, and its consequent unfitness for gestation and parturition.

8. If, on the contrary, the shoulders be much narrower than the pelvis; because, this indicates extreme weakness of the locomotive system.



9. If the shoulders do not slope from the lower part of the neck ; because, this shows that the upper part of the chest is not sufficiently wide of itself, but is rendered angular by the muscularity, etc. of the shoulders.

10. If the upper part of the chest be not relatively short and wide, and if it owe not its width rather to itself than to the size of the shoulders ; because, this shows that the vital organs contained in the chest are not sufficiently expanded.

11. If, in youth, the upper part of the trunk, including the muscles moving the shoulders, do not form an inverted cone, whose apex is the waist ; because, in that case, the lightness and beauty of the locomotive system is destroyed by the unrestrained expansion of the vital.

12. If the loins be not extended at the expense of the chest above and of the limbs below ; because, on this depends their capacity to receive organs enlarged or displayed during gestation

13. If the back be not hollow ; because, this shows that the pelvis is not sufficiently deep to project posteriorly, nor consequently of sufficient capacity for gestation and parturition.

14. If the haunches be not widely expanded (as already implied in speaking of the shoulders) ; because, the interior cavity of the pelvis is then insufficient for gestation and parturition.

15. If, in consequence of the form of the pelvis, and the arch of the pubis being larger, the mons veneris be not more prominent than the chest ; because, the pelvic cavity is then also insufficient for gestation and parturition.

---



16. If the thighs of woman be not wider than those of man; because the width of the female pelvis, and the purposes which it serves, require this.

17. If the size of the thighs be not large, the haunches as it were increasing till they reach their greatest extent at the upper part of the thigh, which anteriorly rises as high as the mons veneris, and if the knees do not approximate; because, a disagreeable vacuity is then left between the thighs, and it is unfavourable to sexual purposes.

18. If the arms and the limbs be not relatively short, if they do not taper greatly as they recede from the trunk, and if the hands and feet be not small; because, it is the vital system and the trunk, which is by far the most important part in the female.

19. If the larynx or flute part of the throat be not small; because their magnitude indicates a masculine character.

#### DEFECTS OF THE VITAL SYSTEM.

(Defects of the contained vital parts, which have been already implied in enumerating those of the containing locomotive parts, are not again mentioned here, as the intelligent reader can easily supply these and similar omissions.)

1. If, in consequence of marriage taking place before their full growth, women remain always of diminished stature, weak and pale.

2. If the digestive organs being large rather than active, is inconsistent with the greater activity and less permanence of all the other functions, secretion, gestation, etc. excepted.

3. If the absorbing vessels, being inactive, are insufficient for large secretions.







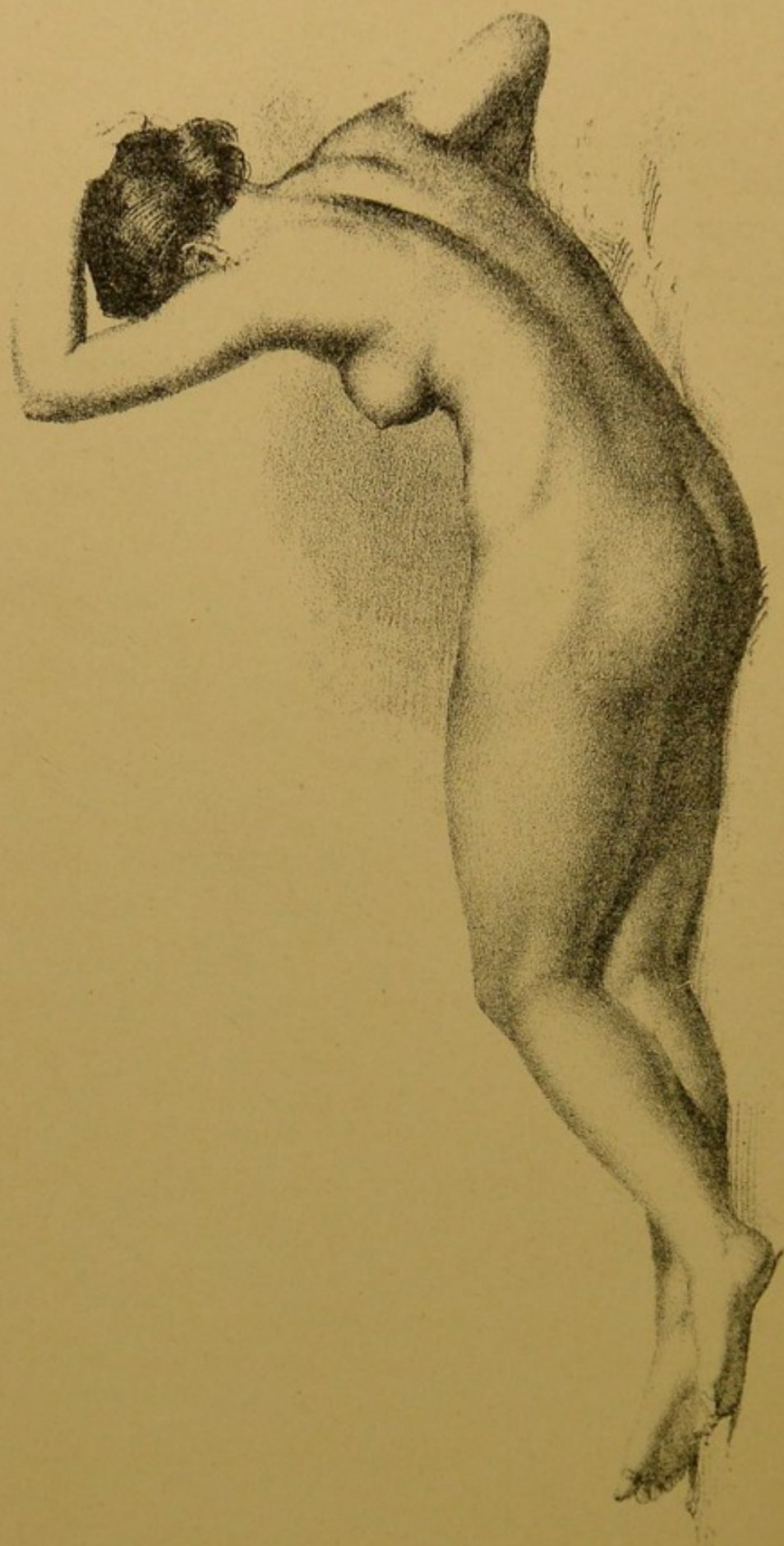


PLATE XX.



4. If the circulating vessels, being inactive and imperfectly ramified, leave the skin cold, opaque, and destitute of complexion.

5. If the secreting vessels, being inactive, furnish neither the plumpness necessary to beauty, nor those ovarian, uterine, and mammary excretions on which progeny is dependent.

6. If the neck form not an insensible transition between the body and head, being sufficiently full to conceal the muscles of the neck and the flute part of the throat.

7. If, in a young woman, the mammæ, without being too large, do not occupy the bosom, and rise from it with nearly equal curves on every side, which similarly terminate in their apices; or if, in the mature woman, they do not, when supported, seem laterally to protrude somewhat on the space occupied by the arms; because, these show that this important part of the vital system is insufficiently developed.

8. If the waist, tapering little further than the middle of the trunk, and being sufficiently marked, especially in the back and loins, by the approximation of the expanded pelvis, be not also slightly encroached on by the plumpness of all the contiguous parts, without however destroying its elegance, softness, and flexibility; because, this similarly shows feebleness in a portion of that system, which is by far the most important to woman.—See Plate XX.

9. If the waist be broader than the upper part of the trunk, including the muscles moving the shoulders; because, this indicates that expansion of the stomach, liver, and other glands which is generally the result of their excessive use or excitement.



It is attended with a common look and an inelegant appearance.

10. If the abdomen be not moderately expanded, its upper portion beginning to swell out, higher even than the umbilicus, and its greatest projection being almost immediately under that point; because, this shows a weakness of the vital system, and a disproportion to the parts immediately above.

11. If the abdomen, which should be highest immediately under the umbilicus, slope not gently towards the mons veneris, and be more prominent elsewhere; because, this is the result of that excessive expansion which takes place during parturition.

12. If the abdomen, which, as well as being elevated, should be narrow at its upper part, become as broad there as below, and lose that gentle lateral depression by which it is distinguished from the more muscular parts on the sides of the pelvis; because this indicates the operation of the causes mentioned in the preceding paragraph.

13. If a remarkable fulness exist not behind the upper part of the haunches, and on each side of the lower part of the spine, commencing as high as the waist, and terminating in the still greater swell of the distinctly separated hips; the flat expanse between these and immediately over the fissure of the hips, being relieved by a considerable dimple on each side, caused by the elevation of all the surrounding parts; because it indicates feebleness in that system which is most essential to woman.

14. If the cellular tissue and the plumpness which is connected with it, do not predominate, so as to obliterate all distinct projection of the muscles: because this likewise shows that an important

















PLATE XXII.



portion of the vital system is feeble, and it deprives woman of the forms which are necessary to love.—See Plate XXI.—Nothing can completely compensate in woman for the absolute want of plumpness. The features of meagre persons are hard; they have a dry and arid physiognomy; the mouth is without charm; the colour is without freshness; their limbs seem ill united with their body; and all their movements are abrupt and coarse.

15. If plumpness be too predominant; because it then destroys the distinctness of parts, and constitutes an excess productive of inconvenience.

16. If that excessive plumpness be broken, as it were, into masses; because it constitutes coarseness of the vital system.

17. If former plumpness have left the previously filled cellular tissue and expanded integuments enfeebled; because that constitutes flaccidity.—See Plate XXII.

18. If the almost entire absorption of adipose substance have finally left the bones angular, the muscles and other parts permanently rigid, and the skin dry; because, that indicates decay of the vital system, and characterizes age.—See Plate IV.

19. If the skin be not fine, soft and white, delicate, thin and transparent, fresh and animated, if the complexion be not pure and vivid, if the hair be not fine, soft and luxuriant, and if the nails be not smooth, transparent, and rose-coloured; because, these likewise show the feebleness of that system which is most important to woman.

#### DEFECTS OF THE MENTAL SYSTEM.

1. If the head, compared with the trunk, be not less than that of the male; because, the mental



system in the female ought to be subordinate to the vital, and the reverse is inconsistent with the healthful and happy exercise of her faculties as woman.

2. If the organs of sense be not proportionally larger, when compared with the brain, and more delicately outlined than in the male; because, sensibility should exceed reasoning power in the female.

3. If the brain (in other words) be not proportionally smaller, when compared with the organs of sense, than in the male; because, reasoning power should be subordinate to sensibility in the female.

4. If the cerebel be not proportionally smaller, when compared with the organs of sense, than in the male; because voluntary power should also be subordinate to sensibility in the female.

5. If the cerebel be not narrow and pointed posteriorly, that is, long rather than broad (its general form in woman); because, the volitions of woman should be intense, not permanent.

6. If the forehead be not large in proportion to the backhead, but on the contrary low, or very narrow; because, the former being the seat of observation, if the organ be small, the function must be correspondingly so, and in that case passion will probably predominate.

7. If the delicacy of the skin permit not to the touch of woman corresponding delicacy.

8. If the mouth be not small, or extend much beyond the nostrils, and if the lips be not delicately outlined and of vermilion hue.

9. If the nose be not nearly in the same direction with the forehead, or if more than a slight inflexion is to be seen.



10. If the eyes be not relatively large and perfectly clear in every part.

11. If the eyelids, instead of an oblong, form nearly a circular, aperture, resembling somewhat the eye of monkeys, cats or birds; because, this round eye when large, and especially when dark, is always indicative of a bold, and, when small, of a pert insensibility of character.

12. If the eyelashes be not long and silky, and if the eyebrows be not furnished with fine hairs, and be not arched and distinctly separated.

13. If the ears be prominent, so as to alter the regularity of the oval of the head, or surcharge its outline with prominences.



## CHAPTER XXI.

EXTERNAL INDICATIONS; OR ART OF DETERMINING THE  
PRECISE FIGURE, THE DEGREE OF BEAUTY, THE MIND,  
THE HABITS, AND THE AGE OF WOMEN, NOTWITH-  
STANDING THE AIDS AND DISGUISES OF DRESS.

---

### EXTERNAL INDICATIONS OF FIGURE.

EXTERNAL indications as to figure are required chiefly as to the limbs, which are concealed by drapery. Such indications are afforded by the walk to every careful observer.

In considering *the proportion of the limbs to the body*,—if, even in a young woman, the walk, though otherwise good, be heavy, or the fall on each foot alternately be sudden, and rather upon the heel, the limbs, though well formed, will be found to be slender, compared with the body.

This conformation accompanies any great proportional development of the vital system; and it is frequently observable in the women of the Saxon population of England, as in the counties of Norfolk, Suffolk, etc.

In women of this conformation, moreover, the slightest indisposition or debility is indicated by a



slight vibration of the shoulders, and upper part of the chest, at every step, in walking.

In considering *the line or direction of the limbs*,—if, viewed behind, the feet, at every step, are thrown out backward, and somewhat laterally, the knees are certainly much inclined inward.

If, viewed in front, the dress, at every step, is as it were, gathered toward the front, and then tossed more or less to the opposite side, the knees are certainly too much inclined.

In considering *the relative size of each portion of the limbs*,—if, in the walk, there be a greater or less approach to the marching pace, the hip is large; for we naturally employ the joint which is surrounded with the most powerful muscles, and in any approach to the march, it is the hip-joint which is used, and the knee and ankle joint which remain proportionally unemployed.

If, in the walk, the tripping pace be used, as in an approach to walking on tiptoes, the calf is large; for it is only by the power of its muscles that, under the weight of the whole body, the foot can be extended for this purpose.

If, in the walk, the foot be raised in a slovenly manner, and the heel be seen, at each step, to lift the bottom of the dress upward and backward, neither the hip nor the calf are well developed.

Even with regard to the parts of the figure which are more exposed to observation by the closer adaptation of dress, much deception occurs. It is, therefore, necessary to understand the arts employed for this purpose, at least by skilful women.

A person having a narrow face, wears a bonnet with wide front, exposing the lower part of the cheeks.—



One having a broad face, wears a closer front; and, if the jaw be wide, it is in appearance diminished, by bringing the corners of the bonnet sloping to the point of the chin.

A person having a long neck has the neck of the bonnet descending, the neck of the dress rising, and filling more or less of the intermediate space. One having a short neck has the whole bonnet short and close in the perpendicular direction, and the neck of the dress neither high nor wide.

Persons with narrow shoulders have the shoulders or epaulettes of the dress, formed on the outer edge of the natural shoulder, very full, and both the bosom and back of the dress running in oblique folds, from the point of the shoulder to the middle of the bust.

Persons with waists too large, render them less before by a stomacher, or something equivalent, and behind by a corresponding form of the dress, making the top of the dress smooth across the shoulders, and drawing it in plaits to a narrow point at the bottom of the waist.

Those who have the bosom too small, enlarge it by the oblique folds of the dress being gathered above, and by other means.

Those who have the lower posterior part of the body too flat, elevate it by the top of the skirt being gathered behind, and by other less skilful adjustments, which though hid, are easily detected.

Those who have the lower part of the body too prominent anteriorly, render it less apparent by shortening the waist, by a corresponding projection behind, and by increasing the bosom above.

Those who have the haunches too narrow, take care not to have the bottom of the dress too wide.



Tall women have a wide skirt, or several flounces, or both of these: shorter women, a moderate one, but as long as can be conveniently worn, with the flounces, etc., as low as possible.

#### EXTERNAL INDICATIONS OF BEAUTY.

Additional indications as to beauty are required chiefly where the woman observed precedes the observer, and may, by her figure, naturally and reasonably excite his interest, while at the same time it would be rude to turn and look in her face on passing.

There can, therefore, be no impropriety in observing, that the conduct of those who may happen to meet the woman thus preceding, will differ according to the sex of the persons who meet her.—If the person meeting her be a man, and the lady observed be beautiful, he will not only look with an expression of pleasure at her countenance, but will afterwards turn more or less completely to survey her from behind.—If the person meeting her be a woman, the case becomes more complex. If both be either ugly or beautiful, or if the person meeting her be beautiful and the lady observed be ugly, then it is probable, that the approaching person may pass by inattentively, casting merely an indifferent glance: if, on the contrary, the woman meeting her be ugly, and the lady observed be beautiful, then the former will examine the latter with the severest scrutiny, and if she sees features and shape without defect, she will instantly fix her eyes on the head-dress or gown, in order to find some object for censure of the beautiful woman, and for consolation in her own ugliness.

Thus he who happens to follow a female may be



aided in determining whether it is worth his while to glance at her face in passing, or to devise other means of seeing it.

Even when the face is seen, as in meeting in the streets or elsewhere, infinite deception occurs as to the degree of beauty. This operates so powerfully, that a correct estimate of beauty is perhaps never formed at first. This depends on the forms and still more on the colours of dress in relation to the face. For this reason, it is necessary to understand the principles according to which colours are employed; at least by skilful women.<sup>1</sup>

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much yellow, then yellow around the face is used to remove it by contrast, and to cause the red and blue to predominate.

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much red, then red around the face is used to remove it by contrast, and to cause the yellow and blue to predominate.

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much blue, then blue around the face is used to remove it by contrast, and to cause the yellow and red to predominate.

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much yellow and red, then orange is used.

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much red and blue, then purple is used.

When it is the fault of a face to contain too much blue and yellow, then green is used.

<sup>1</sup> I speak not of paint here. It is now used only by meretricious persons and by those harridans of higher rank who resemble them in every respect, except that the former are ashamed of their profession, and the latter advertise it.



It is necessary to observe that the linings of bonnets reflect their colour on the face, and transparent bonnets transmit that colour, and equally tinge it. In both these cases, the colour employed is no longer that which is placed around the face, and which acts on it by contrast, but the opposite. As green around the face heightens a faint red in the cheeks by contrast, so the pink lining of the bonnet aids it by reflection.

Hence linings which reflect, are generally of the tint which is wanted in the face; and care is then taken that these linings do not come into the direct view of the observer, and operate prejudicially on the face by contrast, overpowering the little colour which by reflection they should heighten. The fronts of bonnets so lined, therefore, do not widen greatly forward, and bring their colour into contrast.

When bonnets do widen, the proper contrast is used as a lining; but then it has not a surface much adapted for reflection, otherwise it may perform that office, and injure the complexion.

Understanding then, the application of these colours in a general way, it may be noticed, that fair faces are by contrast best acted on by light colours, and dark faces by darker colours.

Dark faces are best affected by darker colours, evidently because they tend to render the complexion fairer; and fair faces do not require dark colours, because the opposition would be too strong.

Objects which constitute a background to the face, or which, on the contrary, reflect their hues upon it, always either improve or injure the complexion. For this and some other reasons, many persons look better at home in their apartments than in the streets.



Apartments may, indeed, be peculiarly calculated to improve individual complexions.

#### EXTERNAL INDICATIONS OF MIND.

External indications as to mind may be derived from figure, from gait, and from dress.

As to figure, a certain symmetry or disproportion of parts (either of which depends immediately upon the locomotive system),—or a certain softness or hardness of form (which belongs exclusively to the vital system),—or a certain delicacy or coarseness of outline (which belongs exclusively to the mental system)—these reciprocally denote a locomotive symmetry or disproportion,—or a vital softness or hardness,—or a mental delicacy or coarseness, which will be found also indicated by the features of the face.

These qualities are marked in pairs, as each belonging to its respective system; for, without this, there can be no accurate or useful observation.

As to gait, that progression which advances, unmodified by any lateral movement of the body, or any perpendicular rising of the head, and which belongs exclusively to the locomotive system,—or that soft lateral rolling of the body, which belongs exclusively to the vital system,—or that perpendicular rising or falling of the head at every impulse to step, which belongs exclusively to the mental system,—these reciprocally indicate a corresponding locomotive, or vital, or mental character, which will be found also indicated by the features of the face.

To put to the test the utility of these elements of observation and indication, let us take a few instances.—If in any individual, locomotive sym-



metry of figure is combined with direct and linear gait, a character of mind and countenance not absolutely repulsive, but cold and insipid, is indicated.

—If vital softness of figure is combined with a gentle lateral rolling of the body in its gait, voluptuous character and expression of countenance are indicated.

—If delicacy of outline in the figure be combined with perpendicular rising of the head, levity, perhaps vanity, is indicated.—But there are innumerable combinations and modifications of the elements which we have just described. Expressions of pride, determination, obstinacy, etc., are all observable.

The gait, however, is often formed, in a great measure, by local or other circumstances, by which it is necessary that the observer should avoid being misled.

Dress, as affording indications, though less to be relied on than the preceding, is not without its value. The woman who possesses a cultivated taste, and a corresponding expression of countenance, will generally be tastefully dressed; and the vulgar woman, with features correspondingly rude, will easily be seen through the inappropriate mask in which her milliner or dressmaker may have invested her.

#### EXTERNAL INDICATIONS OF HABITS.

External indications as to the personal habits of women are both numerous and interesting.

The habit of child-bearing is indicated by a flatter breast, a broader back, and thicker cartilages of the bones of the pubis, necessarily widening the pelvis.

The same habit is also indicated by a high rise of the nape of the neck, so that the neck from that point bends considerably forward, and by an elevation which is diffused between the neck and shoulders.



These all arise from temporary distentions of the trunk in women whose secretions are powerful, from the habit of throwing the shoulders backward during pregnancy, and the head again forward, to balance the abdominal weight; and they bestow a character of vitality peculiarly expressive.

The same habit is likewise indicated by an excess of that lateral rolling of the body in walking, which was already described as connected with voluptuous character. This is a very certain indication, as it arises from temporary distentions of the pelvis, which nothing else can occasion. As in consequence of this lateral rolling of the body, and of the weight of the body being much thrown forward in gestation, the toes are turned somewhat inward, they aid in the indication.

Other effects of child-bearing are indicated admirably in Plate XVIII.

The habit of nursing children is indicated, both in mothers and nursery maids, by the right shoulder being larger and more elevated than the left.

The habits of the sempstress are indicated by the neck suddenly bending forward, and the arms being, even in walking, considerably bent forward or folded more or less upward from the elbows.

Habits of labour are indicated by a considerable thickness of the shoulders below, where they form an angle with the inner part of the arm; and, where these habits are of the lowest menial kind, the elbows are turned outward and the palms of the hands backward.

The habits of many of the inferior female professions might easily be indicated; but they would be unsuitable to a work like this.



## EXTERNAL INDICATIONS OF AGE.

External indications of age are required chiefly where the face is veiled, or where the woman observed precedes the observer and may reasonably excite his interest.

In either of these cases, if the foot and ankle have lost a certain moderate plumpness, and assumed a certain sinewy or bony appearance, the woman has generally passed the period of youth.

If in walking, instead of the ball or outer edge of the foot first striking the ground, it is the heel which does so, then has the woman in general passed the meridian of life.—Unlike the last indication, this is apparent, however the foot and ankle may be clothed. The reason of this indication is the decrease of power which unfits the muscles to receive the weight of the body by maintaining the extension of the ankle joint.

Exceptions to this last indication are to be found chiefly in women in whom the developments of the body are proportionally much greater, either from a temporary or a permanent cause, than those of the limbs, the muscles of which are consequently incapable of receiving the weight of the body by maintaining the extension of the ankle joint.

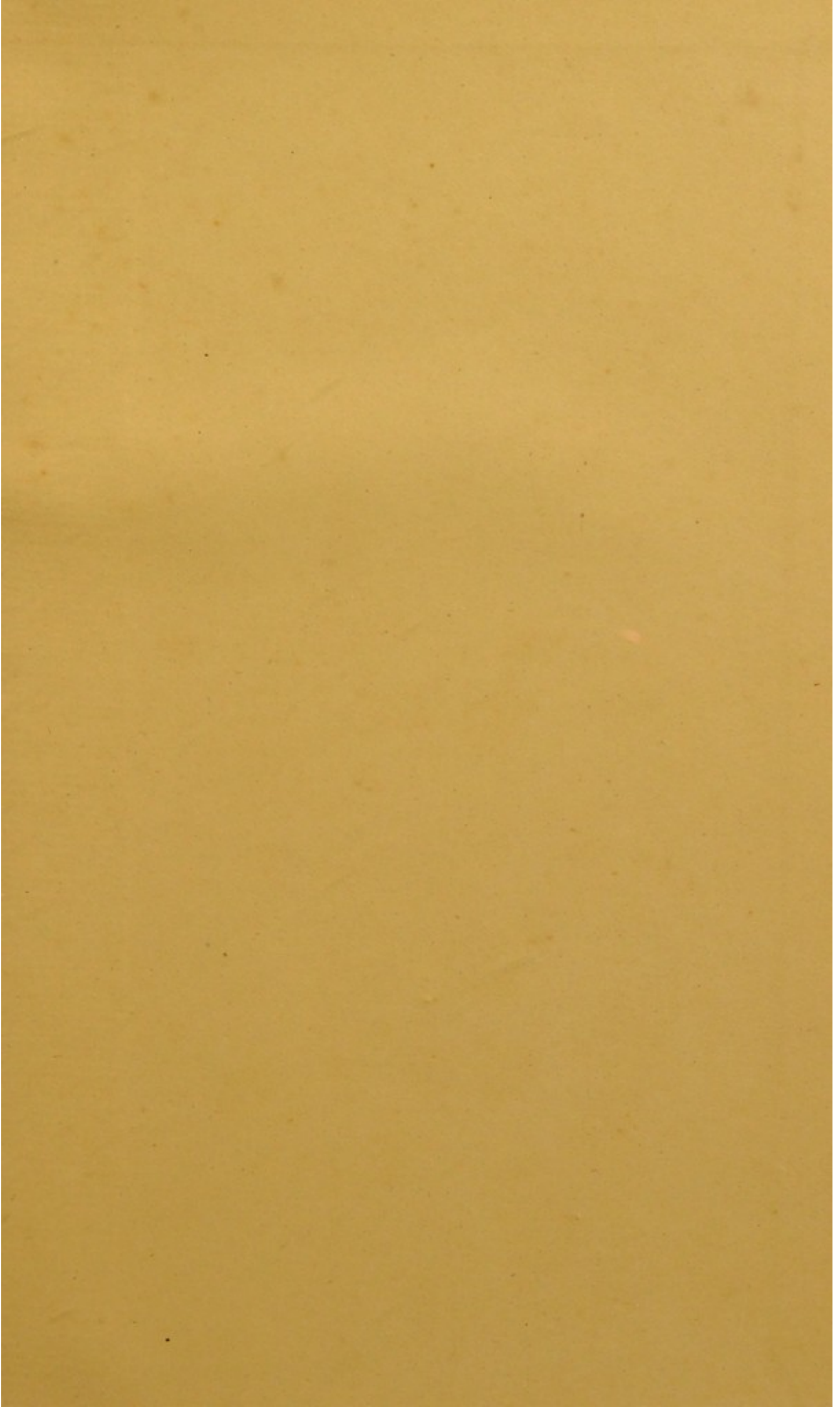
THE END.



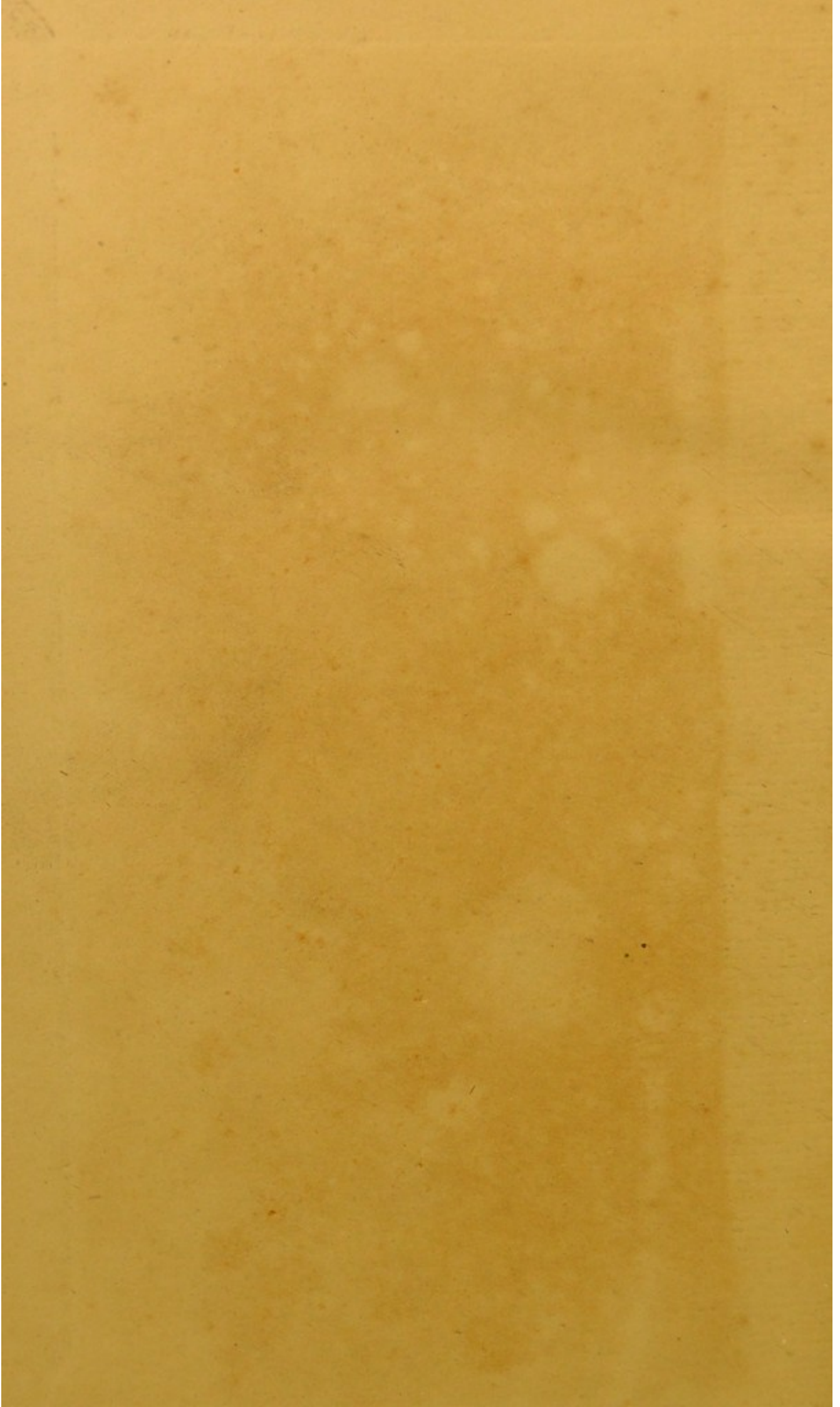














Beauty  
4



